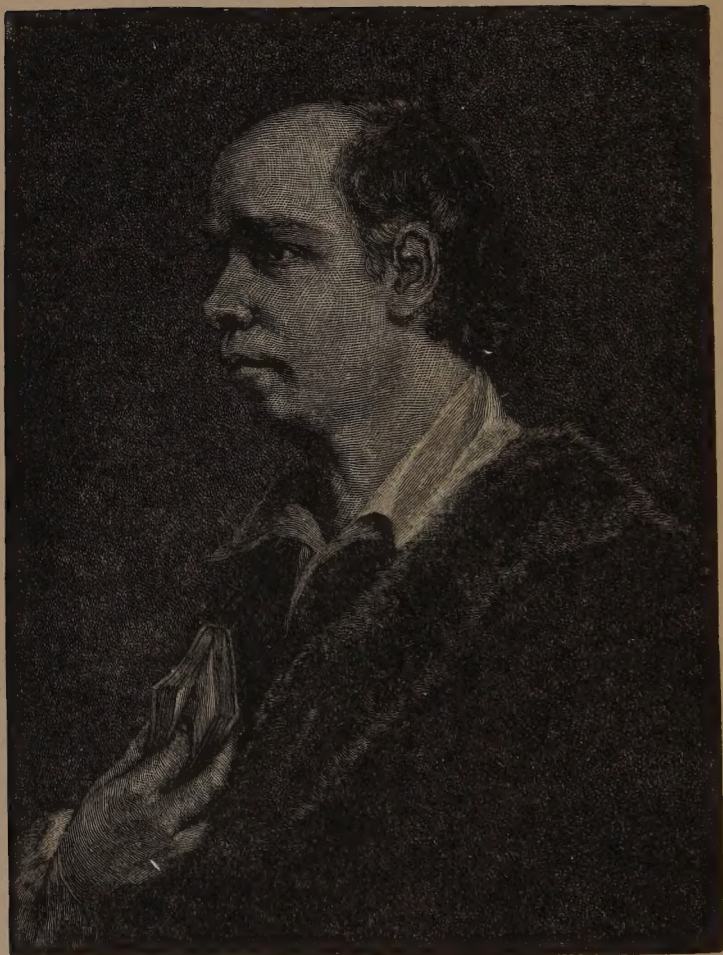


THE
VICAR
OF
WAKE-
FIELD

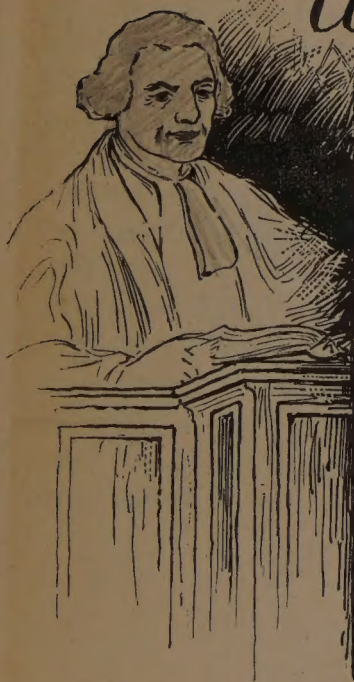
By
OLIVER GOLDSMITH
Edited by W.H. Hudson

18

I am going to be good
now watch!



Heath's English Classics
Goldsmith's
Vicar of
Wakefield



With Notes
and Introduction
by
William
Henry
Hudson
Professor of
English Literature
in
Leland Stanford
Junior University

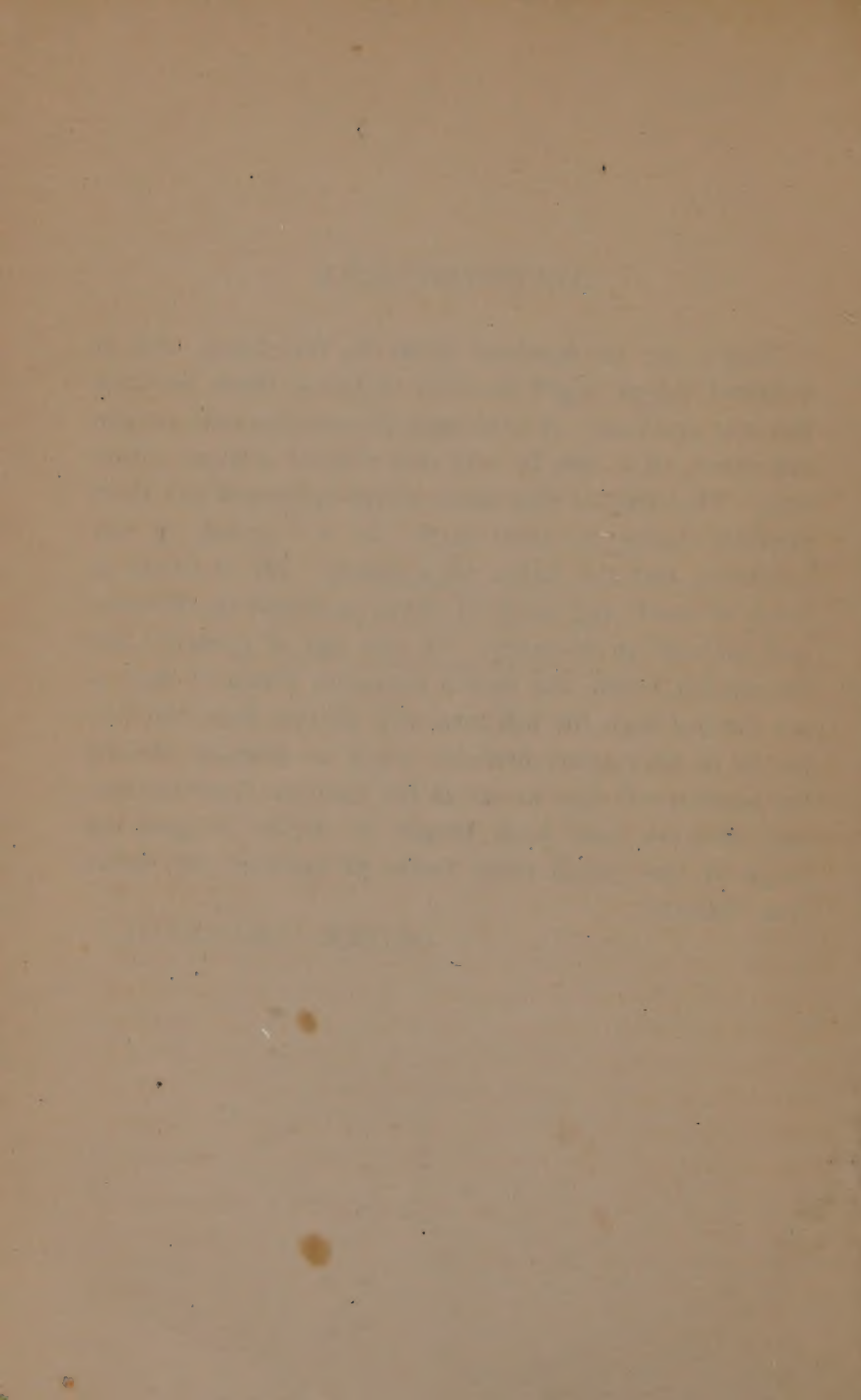
Boston
D. C. Heath & Co. Publishers
1905

COPYRIGHT, 1898,
FOR INTRODUCTION AND NOTES,
BY WILLIAM HENRY HUDSON.

ADVERTISEMENT.

THERE are an hundred faults in this thing, and an hundred things might be said to prove them beauties. But it is needless. A book may be amusing with numerous errors, or it may be very dull without a single absurdity. The hero of this piece unites in himself the three greatest characters upon earth : he is a priest, an husbandman, and the father of a family. He is drawn as ready to teach, and ready to obey ; as simple in affluence, and majestic in adversity. In this age of opulence and refinement, whom can such a character please ? Such as are fond of high life will turn with disdain from the simplicity of his country fireside. Such as mistake ribaldry for humour will find no wit in his harmless conversation ; and such as have been taught to deride religion will laugh at one whose chief stores of comfort are drawn from futurity.

OLIVER GOLDSMITH.

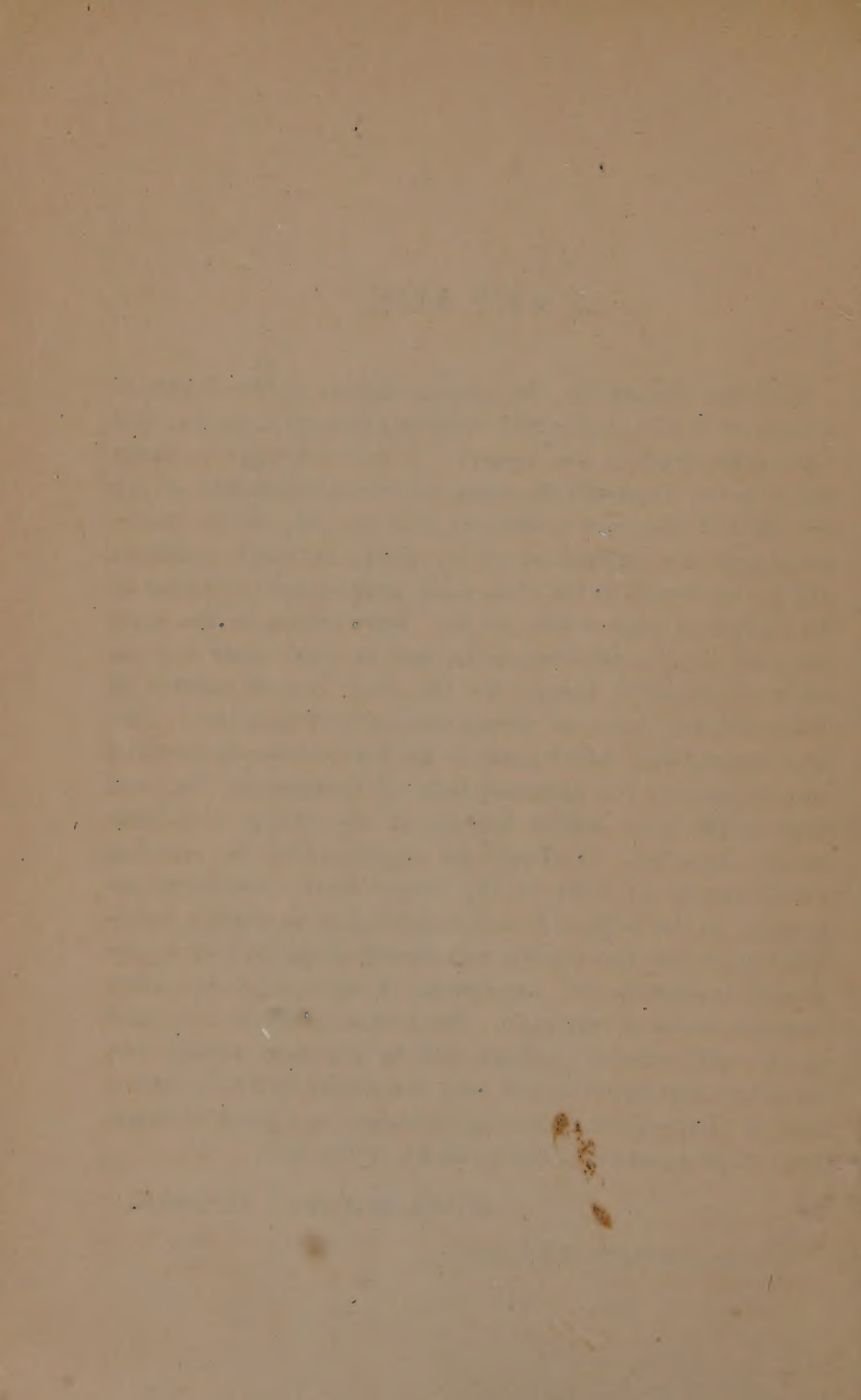


PREFACE.

THE text chosen for the present reprint of *The Vicar of Wakefield* is that of the fifth edition (1773-74), the last that Goldsmith lived to see issued. I have thought it worth while, in the Appendix, to enter into some discussion of the still difficult questions connected with the sale of the manuscript and the publication of the work; but such questions will be dealt with in the class-room only so far, of course, as the individual teacher may see fit. They belong to the more technical aspects of scholarship, and in most cases may be safely disregarded, though for the more mature student of Goldsmith they have an interest and value of their own. The brief biographical sketch given in the Introduction is intended only to present the principal facts of Goldsmith's life, and some of the most salient features of his strange and fascinating character. It should be supplemented as occasion serves by one or more of the longer works mentioned on p. xxxii. In the Notes, I have not undertaken to explain points that the student can readily, and should properly, look up for himself in dictionaries, handbooks of mythology, and other common works of reference. But I have endeavored to clear up all really obscure matters, and to add such critical and expository comments as will help the reader to a fuller enjoyment of Goldsmith's ever-delightful story as a piece of literature and as a picture of the social life of the time.

WILLIAM HENRY HUDSON.

STANFORD UNIVERSITY, March, 1898.



INTRODUCTION.

I. OLIVER GOLDSMITH: THE MAN AND HIS WORK.

EARLY in 1766, the *St. James's Chronicle*, a well-known journal of that time, contained the following announcement: "In a few days will be published in two volumes, twelve,¹ price six shillings bound, or five shillings sewed, *The Vicar of Wakefield*. A Tale supposed to be written by himself. Printed for F. Newbery at the Crown, in Paternoster Row." The work thus promised duly appeared on the 27th of March of that year. In accordance with a habit then common, there was no author's name upon the title-page. But the preface, or "advertisement," as it was called, bore the signature of Oliver Goldsmith.²

The author of this famous book was born on the 10th of November, 1728, and was consequently at the time of its publication in his thirty-eighth year. His life had been a strange and varied one. The son of a poor Protestant clergyman in one of the roughest parts of Ireland, and the most eccentric of an eccentric family, he had as a boy drifted from school to school in his native land, winning among his companions, who none the less loved him for his kindness and joviality,

¹ That is, 12°.

² For some discussion of the difficult questions connected with the writing and publication of *The Vicar of Wakefield*, see Appendix.

the reputation of being "little better than a fool." Of his course of study we know little ; but he must, in his haphazard way, have picked up a fair amount of classical learning, since before he was seventeen, he went up to Dublin, passed the necessary examination, and was admitted to Trinity College. His relatives were too poor to support him during his university career, and Goldsmith was therefore forced to accept the hard conditions of a sizarship — to wear the garb of a servant, and perform menial duties about the college as a return for his tuition and board. To Goldsmith's sensitive nature, such a lot seemed full of degradation ; he accepted it only on pressure from his good Uncle Contarine ; and he suffered keenly under the insults and miseries which it entailed. To make matters worse, his father presently died, and the little money he had hitherto received from home, stopped altogether. Thenceforth his existence at the university was one of squalid poverty, idleness, and dissipation ; his only source of consolation being his German flute, into which he was accustomed to blow his sorrows with a kind of "mechanical vehemence." At twenty-one, after many misadventures, he obtained a bachelor's degree — his name standing "lowest in a list still existing of the graduates who passed on the same day" ; and with this as his passport to fame, returned home.

For some two or three years after this Goldsmith led what Thackeray called "the life of a buckeen" among his relatives, who made sundry futile attempts to get him off their hands and started in a definite career. They thought first of the church, and, under protest, Oliver made application to the Bishop of Elphin, and was rejected — for what precise reason is doubtful, though it is said that it was because he had presented himself before his right reverence in scarlet breeches. Then tutoring was proposed ; but this, after a brief experiment, came to nothing. The next move was in the direction of America, where, Goldsmith had learned, fortunes were to be made by those who had little hopes of making them at

home. So one fine morning he set out with £30, a good horse, and the blessings of the family; got as far as Cork; lost all his money; and in six weeks turned up again at his mother's door, astride a bony steed which he playfully called Fiddleback. Though he marvelled, we need not, that the maternal reception was not enthusiastic. By this time, indeed, family and friends were in a state of despair, and poor Oliver would probably have been left to his own devices, but for Uncle Contarine, who stood loyally by him, and now suggested London and the law. Towards London, then, Oliver set his face, provided with £50 to meet expenses by the way. But the old ill-luck, born of recklessness and improvidence, still pursued him. This time he got stranded in Dublin, where he squandered his little fortune at the gaming-table; and by and bye, ill and contrite, he found his way back to his uncle's home.

Not even now did Mr. Contarine's good-nature give out, and as Goldsmith himself seems at last to have learned something from bitter experience, his fresh start promised more satisfactory results. Law, learning, and the church had been abandoned, but medicine was as yet untried, and to medicine he accordingly turned. Crossing to Edinburgh, then famous for its medical school, he remained as student there from the autumn of 1752 till the early part of 1754. With what success he applied himself to his professional studies, is not very manifest; but it is certain that he gained considerable social reputation "as inimitable teller of a humorous story and capital singer of Irish songs." Supplies during this time came from his ever-generous uncle, but they were small and irregular, and on the practical side his life must often have presented an almost hopeless problem. However, he managed to scrape along in his cheerful, shiftless fashion; and if, looking back, we sometimes wonder whence and how he got his money, we are perhaps even more surprised to read of the facility with which it was always spent.

Eighteen months of desultory study at Edinburgh convinced Goldsmith that he had seen "all that this country can exhibit in a medical way"; and he therefore made up his mind to pursue his investigations on the continent. So in the spring of 1754 he started for Paris, and presently arrived, not in the French capital, but at Leyden. Here he stayed some ten months, eking out a livelihood by teaching, winning money at gambling, and then losing all he had won. Then he determined to see something more of the world. So he left Leyden in February, 1755, "with a guinea in his pocket, one shirt to his back, and a flute in his hand," intent on making the grand tour of Europe.

Goldsmith's itinerary can be marked out without much trouble. After lingering awhile in Flanders, he pushed on to Paris, where he made a lengthy stay, and whence, just touching Germany *en route*, he passed into Switzerland, visiting Geneva, Basle, and Berne, and roaming among the mountains and valleys. Then, crossing the Alps, he went down into Italy, and after remaining awhile in Padua, held there by the fame of its School of Medicine, he made the journey back through France. But though it is easy enough to follow his course, it is impossible to say with any certainty how he contrived to live during these many months. His letters written on the tour have perished, and we are practically thrown back upon the famous chapter in *The Vicar of Wakefield* in which, describing George Primrose's wanderings, he admittedly made use of many of his own experiences. It would seem, then, that he sometimes depended on the hospitality of friars, sometimes slept in barns or by the wayside, sometimes gained supper and a night's lodging, or a few odd coins, by playing upon his flute. It is even supposed that the episode of the travelling tutorship, which fills a considerable space in young Primrose's record, had its counterpart in fact; and if this be so, it throws some light upon the financial puzzles of his extraordinary trip. But after all, we are left to guess. Goldsmith's

odd figure emerges into clear light again only when, after an absence of nearly two years, he landed at Dover, in February, 1756, and tramping thence to London, set his foot for the first time in the great city which was thereafter to be his home.

Goldsmith was now twenty-seven; and though he had managed to get a diploma of M.B. from one of the foreign universities (whether Louvain, Leyden, or Padua is doubtful), and was, therefore, entitled to practise medicine provided he could find any one to practise upon, he was not a whit nearer settlement in life than he had been on leaving Edinburgh a couple of years before. Friendless and penniless in the inhospitable streets of the English metropolis, he now opened another chapter in the history of his struggle with poverty. For a short time he was assistant to an apothecary in Fish Street Hill; and after that he lived as usher, or undermaster, in Dr. Milner's school at Peckham. Finally, by stress of dire necessity, he became an author by profession, or, in less high-flown language, a bookseller's hack of the regular Grub street brood. As yet he realized no vocation in literature. He turned to authorship because authorship offered a temporary livelihood — a miserable livelihood, it is true, but still a livelihood. He began to write simply because "the dogs of hunger were at his heels"; and it was not till after he was thoroughly committed to this new form of drudgery, that he came to feel that he had found his true career.

Not that his vicissitudes and struggles were over. His life to the very end was to be one of ceaseless toil and anxiety; for his relations with the booksellers for whom he wrote were little better than servitude to him, and his characteristic improvidence and open-handed generosity kept him miserably poor. But he lived long enough to take high place among the most distinguished men of letters of his time; and when he died, in the spring of 1774, — £2000 in debt, — it was acknowledged that English literature had lost a writer of unique genius and charm.

It is of Goldsmith in his later years, when he was a member of the famous club which Johnson and a few of his friends founded in 1764, that our personal knowledge is most complete. It was in that very year that the publication of *The Traveller* established his reputation, and those who knew him best seem to have been the most surprised at what he had done. For he was not a man to impress even the closest observer with any sense of his extraordinary powers. Small of stature, ungainly in build, with low protuberant forehead, and a pale face badly pitted with small pox, he was in appearance the reverse of captivating; while his little whims and vanities, his oddities of dress, vagaries of behaviour, slowness of wit in conversation, made him the common butt and laughing stock of his companions. "Poorest of talkers," as Boswell described him, he was ill adapted for social success in the brilliant literary coterie of which he formed a part, and in which it was his constant ambition to shine. Countless are the stories told of his little weaknesses and conceits, his blunders and absurdities, his errors and discomfitures. Poor Goldy! He was always very much of a child, with a child's petulance and capriciousness, and a child's instinctive kindness and tenderness as well. Thus even those who laughed at him, loved him; while those who, judging him as they found him in ordinary intercourse, had regarded him as an amusing simpleton, were forced to revise their opinion when they came to feel the spell of his rare genius as it manifested itself in his published work. For there was the marvel of the man. Put a pen into his hand and leave him to himself; and this strange creature at once showed himself to be a supreme master of smiles and tears; the words which stumbled on his lips, flowed on to the page before him in graceful periods full of easy charm and melody; and wit and epigram came, as it were, at command. As Garrick said of him, in a mock-epitaph, he "wrote like an angel, and talk'd like poor Poll." At the discussions of the club, he might be worsted by almost

any one; but in his own field of literature he could stand against all comers. "What Goldsmith comically says of himself," Johnson declared on one occasion, "is very true,—he always gets the better when he argues alone; meaning, that he is master of a subject in his study, and can write well upon it; but when he comes into company, grows confused, and unable to talk. . . . Whether, indeed, we take him as a poet, as a comic writer, or as an historian, he stands in the first class." These were the words of the great Dictator himself; and, though Boswell might enter his protest, they were not to be gainsaid.

Such, then, was Oliver Goldsmith—one of the strangest, yet one of the most fascinating figures in the annals of literature; a man to be laughed or sneered at by those who did not know him well, for his grotesque ugliness, his uncouth mannerisms, his total lack of *savoir-faire*; to be criticised by the staid moralist for his shiftlessness, his laxity, his numerous failings in conduct; to be loved by those who did know him well in the flesh, as he is still loved by those who know him through his writings, for his softness of heart, his warmth of feeling, his naïve goodness and simplicity. Walpole called him an "inspired idiot"; Warton pronounced him the first of "solemn coxcombs"; Macaulay summed him up as "vain, sensual, frivolous, profuse, improvident." But Burke burst into tears when he heard of his death; Reynolds laid aside his brush for the day; the staircase of Brick Court was filled with a motley crowd of mourners; and Thackeray has described him as "the most beloved of English writers.")

We must now turn from the life of the man himself to his career as an author.

It was at the age of twenty-nine that, as we have seen, Goldsmith found himself committed to literature; and, despite several attempts to escape from it into medicine—the notion of succeeding in which he did not abandon without a sore

struggle — a man of letters he was to be during the remaining seventeen years of his life. He commenced by writing reviews and miscellaneous articles, always anonymous, for various journals of the time; translated under an assumed name *The Memoirs of a Protestant, condemned to the galleys of France for his Religion*; and produced a life of Voltaire and other work of what is technically known as a “pot-boiling” character. Such matters as these have for us only the interest of curiosity. *The Inquiry into the Present State of Polite Learning in Europe* (1759) — undertaken, it would seem, with a view to the purchase of an outfit for a never-obtained medical appointment in India — “is the first production of Goldsmith’s in which one need now look for anything of his real mind,” and which “is still well worth reading” for its own sake.¹ With this, therefore, his true literary work may be said to have begun. Necessity was to the very end to force him into all sorts of hack writing; to which class of “honest journey work in default of better” such compilations as the histories of England (1763 and 1771), of the Earth and Animated Nature (1769), of Rome (1769), and of Greece (1774), as well as the lives of Beau Nash (1762), of Parnell (1770), and of Bolingbroke (1770), all strictly belong. But amid much drudgery for the booksellers he found time to write the works by virtue of which his name and fame survive; and of these — with the exception of *The Vicar of Wakefield*, which will be reserved for separate consideration — a few words may here fittingly be said.

In the *Inquiry* itself, Goldsmith undertook “to point out the symptoms, to investigate the causes, and direct to the remedies of the approaching decay” of literature. For so comprehensive and philosophical a design, his scholarship was inadequate, and as a piece of criticism the essay has no substantial value. But it is interesting because it gives us

¹ Masson’s *Memoir*, prefixed to Globe Ed. of Goldsmith, pp. xxvii.-xxviii.

occasional glimpses of Goldsmith himself, and more particularly because it presents with great clearness some of those immediate and personal conditions of literary production in England at that time, which he had learned from bitter experiences to know so well. Manifest throughout the book, says Forster, is "the conviction that in bad critics and sordid booksellers, learning has to contend with her worst enemies." The age of Johnson and Goldsmith was one of transition; the power of the patron was broken; the power of the public had not yet come in; and in the meantime, the bookseller reigned supreme—with what disastrous consequences the pages of the *Inquiry* still help us to understand.¹ For one other reason the student should give some attention to this work. Written before Goldsmith had met Johnson, it is, nevertheless, the only one of his productions in which he partially puts off his natural style and attempts the "sesquipedalian bow-wow" of his future friend. Perhaps, as Mr. Gosse suggests, "when he came to know Johnson privately, he was influenced less by that great man's writings than by his simple, humorous, and powerful conversation."²

Goldsmith did not put his name to the *Inquiry*, but its authorship was generally known, and its fair reception led various booksellers to seek his services. One of them, named Wilkie, started, in the autumn of 1759, a periodical called *The Bee*, and this was practically written by Goldsmith single-handed. *The Bee* lived for only eight numbers, but his papers were reprinted under the same title in the December of that year. They are miscellaneous in character, comprising translations, literary and dramatic criticism, bits of history

¹ See particularly Chap. VIII. *Of Rewarding Genius in England*.

² *History of Eighteenth Century Literature*, p. 348. It will be remembered that Goldsmith once told Johnson that if he (Johnson) had to make little fishes talk, he would make them talk like whales. For the difference between Johnson's spoken and written styles, the student may refer to Macaulay's essay on Croker's edition of Boswell.

and philosophy, and some moral stories in the fashion of the time. Written with much ease and grace, they everywhere show the influence of the Addisonian essays, the traditions of which they carry on with a success never achieved in the ponderous *Rambler* and *Idler* of Johnson, and thus enable us at once to appreciate the writer's sympathy with and dependence upon the Queen Anne men.¹ Two of the papers are of special interest: the first of the series, on account of its autobiographical touches; and the *City Night Piece* for the record it contains of sights that Goldsmith must often have seen, and the feelings that they stirred in his gentle heart, in many a nocturnal loiter through the London streets.²

Early in 1760, Goldsmith began another set of essays, and these, issued at irregular intervals during some eighteen months, were published as a series in 1762 under the title of *The Citizen of the World; or, Letters from a Chinese Philosopher in London to his Friend in the East*. The design is taken directly from the *Lettres Persanes* of Montesquieu, with whom, however, it was not original. In order to criticise the more effectively the manners, fashions, and institutions of his country, Montesquieu had imagined a couple of intelligent Persian gentlemen, Rica and Usbek, travelling in France, who report their impressions of what they see in letters to one another and to their friends at home. The force of such satire lies in the point of view it enables the writer to adopt: the ills and absurdities of our social system, familiar to us through habit, are exhibited as they would strike a stranger coming upon them for the first time.³ In

¹ See what Goldsmith says about the literature of the reign of Queen Anne in *An Account of the Augustan Age of England* in *The Bee*.

² Goldsmith used this essay again as Letter CXVII. of *The Citizen of the World*.

³ In English the same plan had already been adopted by the author of *The Turkish Spy*, by DeFoe in his *Tour through England* (written as if by a foreigner), by Addison in his *Sa Ga Yean Qua Rash Tow's*

Goldsmith's work, Lien Chi Altangi, the Chinese philosopher, thus helps English civilization to see itself as others would see it. The letters deal with a variety of subjects, passing from grave moralizing over the penal laws and other public evils, on the one side, to the lightest banter of conventional follies, on the other, and touching on all sorts of matters, social and literary, by the way. One interesting feature of them is the evidence they afford in their occasional character studies — particularly in *The Man in Black* and *Beau Tibbs* — of powers afterwards to be fully revealed in *The Vicar of Wakefield* and *She Stoops to Conquer*.

We now come to Goldsmith's two great poems, *The Traveller, or A Prospect of Society* (1764),¹ and *The Deserted Village*. These both belong in a sense to the age in which they were written, and show the writer's theoretic conservatism in literary principles; for they are didactic in purpose — the one being an essay on the happiness of nations, the other a kind of epistle on the evils of luxury;² and they are both written in the regular Augustan couplet. But they are steeped in a feeling which was Goldsmith's own; and they have all the freshness, the rare spontaneous charm, of his nature. We do not read them now for their quaint political economy;³ we read and re-read them for their sweet and wholesome humanity, for their delicate realism, for their mingled pathos and humour, and last but not least, for their revelation of the man himself. For, like so much of his other

Impressions of London (*Spectator*, No. 50), and by Walpole in his *Letter from Xo Ho, a Chinese Philosopher at London, to his friend Lien Chi at Peking* (1757).

¹ This was the first work of Goldsmith to bear his name on the title-page.

² See the admirable criticism of Professor Dowden in Ward's *English Poets*, Vol. III., pp. 368-72.

³ It is significant that Johnson preferred *The Traveller* (to which he contributed a few lines) to the less didactic *Deserted Village*.

work, they are thoroughly personal, drawing upon experience, made out of the stuff of simple fact. *The Traveller*, sketched when Goldsmith was abroad, is full of reminiscences of his continental pilgrimage; (*The Deserted Village* is a dream of men and things he had known and loved in the past, seen through the softening haze of memory and regret.) The "Philosophic Wanderer" of the earlier poem (as Johnson loved to call him) indulging in large reflections on national happiness and destiny, but sighing for home and kindred across the sea, is Goldsmith himself; while as for the characters of the later work — the priest, whose name might be, nay surely was, Primrose, Paddy Byrne, the schoolmaster, the rural politicians gathered round the old inn hearth,—what reader does not instinctively feel that they all once belonged to the poet's life?)

(Goldsmith could not afford to write much poetry—the draggie-tail muses, he said, would have left him to starve. Why, when forced by constant poverty to direct his energies to what seemed most likely to pay, he did not now follow up *The Vicar of Wakefield* with another work of prose fiction, is not very clear.¹ Probably the drama attracted him by reason of its larger opportunities. At any rate, it was to the drama that he turned, showing the wonderful versatility of his genius by producing the two admirable comedies, *The Good-natured Man* (1768) and *She Stoops to Conquer* (1773). The former met with only a qualified success; but the latter instantly took its place among the best acting plays in the language. The stage at this time was not in a flourishing condition; it had lost its ancient vigour; and its most ambi-

¹ It may be mentioned here, though the fact calls for no special remark in the text, that in 1765, under the simple title of *Essays*, Goldsmith collected and republished, under his own name, a number of his earlier anonymous contributions to various periodicals. Many of these had already appeared in *The Bee*; some are reproduced from *The Citizen of the World*.

tious efforts took the form of what was called the "sentimental comedy," which was very genteel, very moral, and very dull. With this sentimental comedy, Goldsmith had no sympathy;¹ and his own plays were intended to lead, and were largely instrumental in leading, public taste back to nature and the older English models. Critics of "refinement" attacked his work because its fun was "low," because the characters were "vulgar," because his plots did not tend to "edification." But the public was ready for the change; "good hearty laughter came again into fashion on the stage, the death-blow was given to prim 'sentimental comedy,' and the practitioners and partisans of that style of drama were beaten off the field."² It is worth while to add, as a further illustration of Goldsmith's habit of drawing upon the materials of his life, that "the mistakes of a night" on which the plot of *She Stoops to Conquer* is made to turn, are said to have been suggested by a ludicrous youthful blunder of his own.

These, then, are the works which have given Goldsmith his place among English classics. Other men of his century produced more; but none left a more enduring, a more perennially delightful legacy, than his. His writings are everywhere marked by wholesome humanity, shrewd observation, quaint and genial humour, and the charm of a style which goes far to redeem even his hastily produced hack work. Above all, the subtle power of his engaging personality is felt in his every page. As Johnson said of him, he was a "gentle master," who "left scarcely any kind of writing untouched, and touched nothing that he did not adorn."³

¹ See his paper *A Comparison between Laughing and Sentimental Comedy*, first published in *The Westminster Magazine* for 1773, and included in Masson's Globe Edition among the miscellaneous essays (p. 346). Also Garrick's prologue to *She Stoops to Conquer*, the dedication of the play to Johnson, and the comments on Tony Lumpkin's song in Act I, Scene 1.

² Masson's *Memoir* (Globe Ed. of Goldsmith), p. xlv.

³ This famous phrase is translated from the Latin epitaph written by

II. THE VICAR OF WAKEFIELD.

A glance at the history of the English novel during the eighteenth century will help us to put Goldsmith's solitary production of that class into its proper place in the literary movements of his time.

It is usual to say that in England prose fiction, in the modern sense of the term, was only twenty-five years old when *The Vicar of Wakefield* was published. We must not press too closely on such a statement; for before Richardson's *Pamela* appeared in 1740-41 — and it is to this work and date that the reference is commonly made — the story writers of the Restoration period with their "little histories," Defoe with his narratives of adventure and crime, and Addison and Steele with their character studies and lightly sketched incidents in *The Tatler* and *The Spectator*, had done much towards the development of the novel as a recognized form of literary art. But while we lay proper stress on these facts, we must still give personal credit where such credit is due. Before *Pamela* English fiction was still uncertain of itself, still entirely experimental in its methods and aims. Richardson, combining elements already existing separately — the study of character and manners on the one hand, and the interest of a continuous plot or story on the other — produced in this work the first regular novel of every-

Johnson for the monument in Westminster Abbey. A number of Goldsmith's friends (Reynolds, Burke, and Gibbon among them) urged that the inscription should be "in English rather than in Latin, as we think that the memory of so eminent an English writer ought to be perpetuated in the language to which his works are likely to be so lasting an ornament, which we know to have been the opinion of the late Doctor himself." But Johnson was immovable. "He would never consent to disgrace the walls of Westminster Abbey with an English inscription. The Latin was accordingly placed upon the marble, where it now remains" (*Forster*, p. 464).

day contemporary life. Hence its immense significance as a landmark in the annals of literature. Goldsmith was then, it will be remembered, between thirteen and fourteen years of age.

With *Pamela* then begins, if not the history of English prose fiction, at any rate a new and very important chapter in that history. The quarter century that followed was a period of extraordinary activity in the field thus opened up. Richardson, himself astonished at the success of his first effort, produced in 1748 and 1754 respectively his much more remarkable though equally long-winded histories of *Clarissa Harlowe* and *Sir Charles Grandison*. Almost side by side with these appeared the works of the greatest novelist of the century, Henry Fielding. Starting with the simple intention of burlesquing Richardson, whose sentimental moralizings were entirely alien to his most robust nature, he wrote first *Joseph Andrews* (1742), then the wonderful "prose epic" of *Tom Jones* (1749), and two years later than this the less characteristic *History of Amelia*. Then came the third of the great eighteenth century trio, Tobias Smollett, whose *Roderick Random* and *Peregrine Pickle* were issued, the former in the same year as *Clarissa Harlowe*, the latter in the same year as *Amelia*, and whose *Expedition of Humphrey Clinker* (1771) may be considered the last expression of the school to which it belongs. If to these works we add, what is indeed scarcely a novel, though it is often roughly treated as such, the *Tristram Shandy* (1759-1767) of Laurence Sterne, Johnson's *Rasselas* (1759), a moral essay thrown into the form of a story, and Walpole's *Castle of Otranto* (1764), which marks the revival of the mediæval romance, we shall get some idea of what a single generation had done in one direction for English literature. Three decades witnessed, not only the firm establishment of prose fiction, but also the production of a number of works which even to-day, despite the enormous development of the novel in the present cen-

ture, are still recognized among the masterpieces of their class.

It was just at the close, then, of this great period, when Fielding and Richardson were already dead, and Smollett, broken in health, had almost reached the end of his career, that *The Vicar of Wakefield* was written; and it is natural to ask what Goldsmith as a novelist owed to his predecessors. In one way, of course, his indebtedness to them can hardly be overstated. The popularity which they had won for the novel was unquestionably his immediate incentive to try his hand in the same line of work; but for them and their leadership *The Vicar of Wakefield* would never have been undertaken. Beyond this he profited to some extent — though not so much as might have been expected — by their example on the technical side; less than might have been expected we say, because, as we shall presently note, his own production, structurally considered, will not by any means bear comparison with those of Richardson and Fielding, or even of Smollett. But after making due allowance for Goldsmith's natural dependence upon these great writers as regards the form and to some extent the method of his work, we must realize, on the other hand, that in all its essential qualities his one novel, like his essays, poems, and plays, was wholly and entirely his own. Richardson, Fielding, Smollett, Walpole, had started English fiction upon many lines, dealing with life under the most varied aspects and from widely different points of view. But it was reserved for Goldsmith to initiate the idyllic novel — to portray with mingled humour and pathos the lives and doings of simple country folk, to touch the actualities of their existence with the transfiguring power of the poet, and to fill his descriptions with deep and genuine feeling, born of closest sympathy with the things of which he wrote. Thus, instead of following the course which others had marked out, he established a fresh point of departure. To recognize this is to appreciate something of his originality,

and to understand why his work occupies a place by itself among the great novels of the time.

This brings us to the first point to be noted in our study of *The Vicar of Wakefield*. If it is, as we feel, a story which no one but he could have written, this is largely because of the personal element in it. His habit was, as we have seen, to put himself—his own experiences, his own feelings—into everything he wrote. Here, as elsewhere, he drew frankly upon his life, upon his vivid recollections of the world he had actually seen and known. Dr. Primrose, good, guileless, eccentric, is without question his father, as the clergyman in *The Deserted Village* is his older brother, Henry; Moses and Mr. Burchell are humoristic studies of himself; while in George Primrose's "philosophic" pilgrimage we have only another account of those continental wanderings which had already been described in *The Traveller*. It should perhaps be added that in thus keeping close to a personal experience which, while varied enough in some ways, had been singularly narrow in others, Goldsmith necessarily limited the field of his work. There is a great deal of sameness in the materials used by him; but this fact only makes us admire the more the delicate art by which a few incidents, characters, and situations are cunningly recombined into constantly fresh results.

Two qualifying remarks, however, must here be made. In the first place, Goldsmith, though he painted habitually from life, was in no sense a realist. He looked at fact through a poetic medium. Describing what he had known, he described it as it appeared to him, years afterward, mellowed and beautified in the twilight of memory. His writings belong to the class of "idealized reminiscence."¹ The harder

¹ Masson's *Memoir* (Globe Ed. of Goldsmith), p. lx. It would be a matter of interest to the mature student to contrast the idealistic realism of Goldsmith with the pure realism of Crabbe; comparing, for instance, the description of the village priest and the inn, in *The Deserted Village*, with the corresponding descriptions in *The Village*.

outlines of actuality are toned down in his pages; the real world is raised, by the imagination of the poet, into a higher and purer atmosphere than that of everyday life.

In the second place, it is curious to observe that, as Professor Masson has pointed out, Goldsmith almost completely discharged from his reminiscences every trace of special Irish colour. (He is one of the most thoroughly English of English writers. Sweet Auburn has been identified with Lissoy; but Auburn is none the less an English village; the landscape in which it is set, is an English landscape; and the nightingale, unknown in Ireland, sings among its trees. "The ideal air in which its phantasies are hung is an English air."¹ *She Stoops to Conquer* and *The Good-Natured Man* are English plays, filled with English characters; and *The Vicar of Wakefield* is a genuine English prose-idyll.

Turning from these general considerations to *The Vicar of Wakefield* itself, we cannot but be struck, even on a casual perusal of the story, by its extraordinary imperfections as a narrative of events. This is a point which modern novel-readers, accustomed to the neat workmanship which has long been a technical tradition, will naturally find it impossible to overlook, and which is certain to cause them, on further study, a good deal of surprise. It is clear that Goldsmith either did not take the trouble to put together a coherent plot, or failed from lack of ability to do so. Perhaps, as Mr. Black suggests, when the author began his story he had no very definite idea of the course he was going to pursue, and thus, when the good Vicar was presently to be restored to happiness, he had to make frantic efforts in order to break through the entanglements in which he had involved him.² Or perhaps, in the words of another critic, the "happy Irish inconsequence" of Goldsmith's mind, "that led him in his *Animated Nature* to include among the varieties of the human race dwarfs and giants, mummies and wax works, because he

¹ Masson, p. lx. ² *Goldsmith* (in *English Men of Letters*), Chapter XI.

had seen some of these in a show at Chelsea, made him averse to all rigid and reasoned structure in his novel.¹ Be the reason what it may, the fact remains that the plot of *The Vicar of Wakefield* is ill-concocted, badly managed, and huddled up at the close in the most ludicrous fashion. "We cannot," says Sir Walter Scott, "conceive how Sir William Thornhill should contrive to masquerade under the name of Burchell among his own tenantry, and upon his own estate; and it is absolutely impossible to see how his nephew, the son, doubtless, of a younger brother (since Sir William inherited both title and property), should be nearly as old as the Baronet himself. . . . The character of Burchell, or Sir William Thornhill, is in itself extravagantly unnatural. A man of his benevolence would never have so long left his nephew in the possession of wealth which he employed to the worst of purposes. Far less would he have permitted his scheme upon Olivia in a great measure to succeed, and that upon Sophia also to approach consummation; for, in the first instance, he does not interfere at all, and in the second, his interference is accidental."² These are simply conspicuous specimens of the wild improbabilities through which the story ambles on, incident following incident with little attempt at what Johnson would have called "concatenation." Instances of hurried narration abound throughout, though this defect is most manifest in the concluding chapters; while, with few exceptions — the most noteworthy being the episode of

¹ Walter Raleigh, *The English Novel*, p. 208. As Mr. Gosse says: "If we set aside our familiarity with it as a tale, and try to think of it afresh as a literary work, we shall probably be inclined to admit that it is more like an extended episode, in the *Spectator* manner, than a story. . . . The happiest passages in *The Citizen of the World* and the *Essays* give us the impression that a long and realistic study of the development of emotion was beyond his [Goldsmith's] powers, or, which is perhaps the same thing, contrary to his inclination." *History of Eighteenth Century Literature*, p. 349.

² *Oliver Goldsmith* (in *Lives of Eminent Novelists and Dramatists*.)

Olivia's flight (chapter xvii.), which is introduced with fine irony — little effort is made to develop the dramatic possibilities of the scenes. Worst of all, perhaps, is the fact that, in the exceedingly forced *dénouement*, Goldsmith is evidently at a loss to know what to do with poor Olivia and her husband, and so allows them to slip out of our sight in a way that every reader must feel to be in the last degree unsatisfactory.

"There are a hundred faults in this thing," said Goldsmith himself in the "Advertisement" to the first edition; and so far as the plot is concerned, the frank confession is not far from the truth. But it is not for the plot that any one now reads *The Vicar of Wakefield*. It is for the human element in it, the men and women into whom the novelist has breathed the breath of life. When we pass from the incidents of the story to its characters, we leave the field where Goldsmith is at his weakest, and enter that where he is at his best.

Not that even here he is uniformly successful. Several of the characters are shadowy and unreal; some, like the younger Thornhill and his satellites, throughout; others, like Sir William, a considerable part of the time. But for the Vicar and his family no praise would be excessive. We know them as we know people in real life; and yet so delicate is the art with which they are brought before us, that it is only by careful study that we come to realize its subtlety. It should be noted that by adopting the autobiographical, or first-personal form of narration, Goldsmith secures one admirable result — he makes us see life and its problems, men and their doings, from the angle of vision and through the eyes of his hero, the Vicar himself. It is his personality, therefore, that dominates the book, his kindly spirit that suffuses its philosophy. Let us think for a moment of all we should have lost if the joys and sorrows of the little home-circle we love so well, the scenes in the prison, the details of the great Whistonian controversy, and all the incidents that go to make up the humour and pathos of the record, had found their historian, not in

Dr. Primrose in proper person, but in some one standing as it were outside, observing and reporting. Goldsmith knew thoroughly what he was about when he put upon his title-page — *The Vicar of Wakefield: a Tale supposed to be written by Himself*. This, then, is a point never to be lost sight of; not only because our appreciation of the unity of tone of the work depends upon our constant recollection of it; but also because the supreme evidence of Goldsmith's wonderful insight and art is to be found in the way in which, detail by detail, the good clergyman's character is self-revealed to us in all its humaneness, simple vanity, unsophistication, and whimsicality. "There is," says Mr. Black, "as much human nature in the character of the Vicar alone as would have furnished any fifty of the novels of that day, or of this." And this statement of one who is himself a skilled novelist will hardly strike any attentive reader as overshooting the mark.

A little attention must now be given to the purpose and moral spirit of the story.

The theme of *The Vicar of Wakefield* is, of course, the struggle of good and evil, and its object to exhibit the triumph of the former in the long run, against seemingly overwhelming odds. As in the Book of Job, the man of God is subjected to a succession of misfortunes calculated to break down the strongest nature and the firmest faith; and throughout he rises superior to adversity, and retains his trust in providence and the divine ordering of the world. It may be urged that when at length this trust is apparently justified by the restoration of the afflicted man and his family to happiness, the result is brought about by such desperate means that the value of the moral is seriously impaired. This would be true if the happy ending really constituted any essential part of the ethical design of the book. But it does not. "Happiness and misery," runs the heading of the twenty-eighth chapter, are "rather the result of prudence than

of virtue, in this life; temporal evils or felicities being regarded by Heaven as 'things merely in themselves trifling, and unworthy its care in the distribution.' The fundamental moral of the story is not, therefore, to be sought, where readers are generally apt to look for it, in the final issue of its events, but rather in the noble presentation of manly courage, piety, and faith, given in the person of its hero. And this lofty lesson, as Professor Raleigh has well remarked, "shows Goldsmith also high among the moralists of the century," and "receives additional enforcement in the author's manifest carelessness as to the temporal destiny of his characters."¹ It helps us, too, to appreciate the entire absence of any "goody-goody" tendency even in such scenes as that in which the Vicar preaches his simple gospel to the inmates of the jail.

Goldsmith's story, Scott has said, possesses a double power: while it amuses us in an idle hour, it contrives to reconcile us to life as well. Yet this essential moral quality is mainly due, not to the direct philosophy, of which we have spoken, but to its eminently wholesome tone, its sweet idyllic atmosphere. What we remember most vividly long after the book has been laid aside and its details forgotten, is the charming picture of gentle home-life, painted—the marvel of it!—by a man who himself had for years been a homeless wanderer, and to whom the things he wrote of so tenderly could have been present only as recollections of a past, never to be recalled.² And that this picture may be made the brighter and the more attractive, it is exhibited in contrast with the conventions, affectations, and villanies of fashionable society, on the one hand, and with vice in its grosser and more sordid forms, on the other. Thus we are brought to feel the intrinsic beauty of faith and love, of courage and up-

¹ *The English Novel*, p. 208.

² See the beautiful passage in *The Deserted Village*, beginning—"In all my wanderings round this world of care."

rightness; and these virtues become the more real for us, because they are associated, not with transcendent powers and brilliant achievements, but with qualities and even weaknesses that belong to common life. /

One other matter remains to be emphasized. Looking back into the age of Goldsmith from the point of view of our wiser and more humane ideas of social duty and responsibility, we are shocked to read of the barbarism which characterized its whole treatment of crime and the criminal classes. Penal laws were revoltingly severe and recklessly administered; capital punishment was employed for a vast number of petty offences; and public hangings were so frequent that even Horace Walpole called the country "a shambles." One of the first of his generation to see these terrible facts in their true light and to appreciate their full meaning, Goldsmith raised his voice on behalf of humanity. The chapters in *The Vicar of Wakefield* in which he describes the prison and its fermenting evils, and records the good work accomplished by Dr. Primrose among people who, however degraded, were "still men," were without precedent in the fiction of the time, and almost, if not quite, without precedent in more serious literature. Such appeal in favour of those who hitherto had had no spokesman, such warning addressed to a society too careless or too blind to understand how disastrous to its own interests was the penal system it had so long accepted as a matter of course, must be read with full recollection of the state of things then existing to be appreciated in all their profound significance. It was the habit of some of Goldsmith's contemporaries to make fun of his artlessness and simplicity, and to consider him as at best only a harmless caterer of public amusement. But we are glad to recognize in the delightful humourist a man who, in the broad and noble wisdom of sympathy and humanity, was far ahead of even the most enlightened preachers and teachers of his time.

A word may be added concerning the public reception of

the book to which the student is now ready to turn for himself.

That such reception was, on the whole, favourable, is shown by the fact that three authorized editions and two unauthorized reprints were issued during the first year, and that the book was in its fifth edition when Goldsmith died. But, strangely enough as it seems to us to-day, criticism hardly condescended to notice it; while among the members of Johnson's club, Burke alone seems to have rated it at anywhere near its true worth. From some cause, too, not easy to discover, the financial results were by no means brilliant. Mr. Dobson shows that the fourth edition started with a loss, and that before the fifth appeared, Collins, one of the three original owners of the copyright, had sold his share to one of his colleagues for the absurdly small sum of five guineas. Moreover, after the exhaustion of these editions, the sale fell off, and it took nearly nine years to get rid of two thousand more copies. But meanwhile, translations were made into French and German, and despite this temporary decline in public interest, the success of the book was assured. From that time on, by reason of its freshness of genius and humanity, it was to hold secure place among the masterpieces of English prose.

We cannot close this little introduction more fitly than by telling once again the often-told story of the effect which *The Vicar of Wakefield* produced when, in one of the German translations just mentioned, it fell accidentally into the hands of a youth who was presently to be recognized as the greatest European man of letters of his age. Writes Mr. Forster:—

“It had been published little more than four years, when two Germans whose names became afterwards world-famous, one a student at that time in his twentieth, the other a graduate in his twenty-fifth year, met in the city of Strasburg. The younger, Johann Wolfgang Goethe, a law-student of the university, with a passion for literature, sought knowledge

from the elder, Johann Gottfried Herder, for the course on which he was moved to enter. Herder, a severe and masterly, though somewhat cynical critic, laughed at the likings of the young aspirant, and roused him to other aspirations. Producing a German translation of *The Vicar of Wakefield*, he read it out aloud to Goethe in a manner which was peculiar to him; and, as the incidents of the little story came forth in his serious, simple voice, . . . a new ideal of letters and of life arose in the mind of the listener. Years passed on; and while that younger student raised up and re-established the literature of his country, and came at last, in his prime and in his age, to be acknowledged for the wisest of modern men, he never ceased throughout to confess what he owed to those old evenings at Strasburg. The strength which can conquer circumstances; the happy wisdom of irony which elevates itself above every object, above fortune and misfortune, good and evil, life and death, and attains to the possession of a poetical world, first visited Goethe in the tone with which Goldsmith's tale is told. The fiction became to him life's first reality. . . . He remembered it, when, at the height of his worldly honour and success, he made his written life (*Dichtung und Wahrheit*) record what a blessing it had been to him; he had not forgotten it, when, some twenty years ago,¹ standing at the age of eighty-one on the very brink of the grave, he told a friend that in the decisive moment of mental development, *The Vicar of Wakefield* had formed his education, and that he had recently, with unabated delight, 'read the charming book again from beginning to end,' not a little 'affected by the lively recollection' of how much he had been indebted to the author seventy [sixty] years before."²

¹ That is, in 1830.

² *Life and Times of Goldsmith* (Minerva Ed.), pp. 240-241. Goethe's account of *The Vicar of Wakefield* will be found in his *Autobiography* (*Dichtung und Wahrheit*), Book X.

Alas, for the irony of life ! Poor Goldsmith died without dreaming of this wide-spread influence of his work. He probably never heard of Herder ; almost certainly never knew that there was such a man as Goethe in the world.

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTE.

An admirable sketch of Goldsmith's life and character will be found in the *Memoir* prefixed by Professor David Masson to the Globe Edition of Goldsmith's *Miscellaneous Works* (Macmillan). Of short biographies, Austin Dobson's in the *Great Writers Series* (London : Walter Scott) is by far the best. That contributed by William Black to the *English Men of Letters* series (New York : Harper) is readable enough, but has little critical value. John Forster's *Life and Times of Oliver Goldsmith* is the standard work on the subject, and a mine of information from which all later writers have been forced to draw. A one-volume reprint of the abridged edition is included in the cheap *Minerva Library of Famous Books* (Ward, Lock & Co.). Washington Irving's *Life of Goldsmith* is full of a charm of its own, due largely to sympathy and essential kinship of genius. It is almost unnecessary to add formal mention of Boswell's *Life of Johnson*, a work which every student of Goldsmith should be led at least to dip into.

There are various good modern editions of Goldsmith's *Works*, among which that of Gibbs (in Bohn's *Standard Library*), that of Peter Cunningham (New York : Harper), and that published in London by J. M. Dent & Co., and in Philadelphia by Lippincott, may be named. Austin Dobson's facsimile reprint of the first edition of *The Vicar of Wakefield* (London : 1885) calls for particular remark.

Criticisms of Goldsmith as man and writer are almost past

counting ; but special reference should be made to Thackeray's sketch in *The English Humourists of the Eighteenth Century*. Other essays of some importance are those of De Quincey and Scott.

For an analysis of Goldsmith's prose style, the student may turn to Minto's *Manual of English Prose Literature*.

A full bibliography of Goldsmith is appended to Austin Dobson's biography (*Great Writers Series*), above mentioned.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
PREFACE	v
INTRODUCTION: —	
I. Oliver Goldsmith: the Man and his Work . . .	vii
II. <i>The Vicar of Wakefield</i>	xx
Bibliographical Note	xxxii
THE VICAR OF WAKEFIELD	i
NOTES	241
APPENDIX: Circumstances of the Writing and Publication of	
<i>The Vicar of Wakefield</i>	259

THE VICAR OF WAKEFIELD.

CHAPTER I.

THE DESCRIPTION OF THE FAMILY OF WAKEFIELD, IN WHICH A KINDRED LIKENESS PREVAILS, AS WELL OF MINDS AS OF PERSONS.

I WAS ever of opinion that the honest man who married and brought up a large family did more service than he who continued single and only talked of population. From this motive, I had scarce taken orders a year before I began to think seriously of matrimony, 5 and chose my wife, as she did her wedding-gown, not for a fine glossy surface, but such qualities as would wear well. To do her justice, she was a good-natured, notable woman; and as for breeding, there were few country ladies who could show more. She could read 10 any English book without much spelling; but for pickling, preserving, and cookery, none could excel her. She prided herself also upon being an excellent contriver in housekeeping; though I could never find that we grew richer with all her contrivances. 15

However, we loved each other tenderly, and our fondness increased as we grew old. There was, in fact, nothing that could make us angry with the world or each

other. We had an elegant house, situated in a fine country, and a good neighbourhood. The year was spent in a moral or rural amusement; in visiting our rich neighbours and relieving such as were poor. We had no revolutions to fear nor fatigues to undergo; all our adventures were by the fireside, and all our migrations from the blue bed to the brown.

As we lived near the road, we often had the traveller or stranger visit us to taste our gooseberry wine, for which we had great reputation; and I profess, with the veracity of an historian, that I never knew one of them find fault with it. Our cousins, too, even to the fortieth remove, all remembered their affinity, without any help from the herald's office, and came very frequently to see us. Some of them did us no great honour by these claims of kindred; as we had the blind, the maimed, and the halt among the number. However, my wife always insisted that, as they were the same *flesh and blood*, they should sit with us at the same table. So that if we had not very rich, we generally had very happy friends about us; for this remark will hold good through life, that the poorer the guest, the better pleased he ever is with being treated: and as some men gaze with admiration at the colours of a tulip or the wing of a butterfly, so I was by nature an admirer of happy human faces. However, when any one of our relations was found to be a person of very bad character, a troublesome guest, or one we desired to get rid of, upon his leaving my house I ever took care to lend him a riding-coat, or a pair of boots, or sometimes a horse of small value, and I always had the satisfaction of finding he never came back to return

them. By this the house was cleared of such as we did not like; but never was the family of Wakefield known to turn the traveller or the poor dependent out of doors.

Thus we lived several years in a state of much happiness; not but that we sometimes had those little rubs 5 which Providence sends to enhance the value of its favours. My orchard was often robbed by schoolboys, and my wife's custards plundered by the cats or the children. The Squire would sometimes fall asleep in the most pathetic parts of my sermon, or his lady return 10 my wife's civilities at church with a mutilated courtesy. But we soon got over the uneasiness caused by such accidents, and usually in three or four days began to wonder how they vexed us.

My children, the offspring of temperance, as they 15 were educated without softness, so they were at once well formed and healthy: my sons hardy and active, my daughters beautiful and blooming. When I stood in the midst of the little circle, which promised to be the supports of my declining age, I could not avoid repeat- 20 ing the famous story of Count Abensberg, who, in Henry the Second's progress through Germany, while other courtiers came with their treasures, brought his thirty-two children, and presented them to his sovereign as the most valuable offering he had to bestow. In this 25 manner, though I had but six, I considered them as a very valuable present made to my country, and consequently looked upon it as my debtor. Our eldest son was named George, after his uncle, who left us ten thousand pounds. Our second child, a girl, I intended 30 to call after her aunt Grissel; but my wife, who during

her pregnancy had been reading romances, insisted on her being called Olivia. In less than another year we had another daughter, and now I was determined that Grissel should be her name; but a rich relation taking
5 a fancy to stand godmother, the girl was, by her directions, called Sophia; so that we had two romantic names in the family; but I solemnly protest I had no hand in it. Moses was our next, and after an interval of twelve years we had two sons more.

10 It would be fruitless to deny exultation when I saw my little ones about me; but the vanity and the satisfaction of my wife were even greater than mine. When our visitors would say, "Well, upon my word, Mrs. Primrose, you have the finest children in the whole
15 country," — "Ay, neighbour," she would answer, "they are as heaven made them, handsome enough, if they be good enough; for handsome is that handsome does." And then she would bid the girls hold up their heads; who, to conceal nothing, were certainly very handsome.
20 Mere outside is so very trifling a circumstance with me that I should scarce have remembered to mention it had it not been a general topic of conversation in the country. Olivia, now about eighteen, had that luxuriancy of beauty with which painters generally draw Hebe: open,
25 sprightly, and commanding. Sophia's features were not so striking at first, but often did more certain execution; for they were soft, modest, and alluring. The one vanquished by a single blow, the other by efforts successfully repeated.

30 The temper of a woman is generally formed from the turn of her features, at least it was so with my daughters.

Olivia wished for many lovers, Sophia to secure one. Olivia was often affected, from too great a desire to please. Sophia even repressed excellence, from her fears to offend. The one entertained me with her vivacity when I was gay, the other with her sense when I was 5 serious. But these qualities were never carried to excess in either, and I have often seen them exchange characters for a whole day together. A suit of mourning has transformed my coquette into a prude, and a new set of ribbons has given her younger sister more than natural 10 vivacity. My eldest son George was bred at Oxford, as I intended him for one of the learned professions. My second boy Moses, whom I designed for business, received a sort of miscellaneous education at home. But it is needless to attempt describing the particular charac- 15 ters of young people that had seen but very little of the world. In short, a family likeness prevailed through all; and, properly speaking, they had but one character, that of being all equally generous, credulous, simple, and inoffensive.

CHAPTER II.

FAMILY MISFORTUNES. THE LOSS OF FORTUNE ONLY
SERVES TO INCREASE THE PRIDE OF THE WORTHY.

THE temporal concerns of our family were chiefly committed to my wife's management; as to the spiritual, I took them entirely under my own direction. The profits of my living, which amounted to but thirty-five pounds a year, I made over to the orphans and widows of the clergy of our diocese; for, having a fortune of my own, I was careless of temporalities, and felt a secret pleasure in doing my duty without reward. I also set a resolution of keeping no curate, and of being acquainted
10 with every man in the parish, exhorting the married men to temperance, and the bachelors to matrimony; so that in a few years it was a common saying that there were three strange wants at Wakefield: a parson wanting pride, young men wanting wives, and ale-houses wanting
15 customers.

Matrimony was always one of my favourite topics, and I wrote several sermons to prove its happiness; but there was a peculiar tenet which I made a point of supporting: for I maintained with Whiston that it was unlawful for
20 a priest of the Church of England, after the death of his

first wife, to take a second, or, to express it in one word, I valued myself upon being a strict monogamist.

I was early initiated into this important dispute, on which so many laborious volumes have been written. I published some tracts upon the subject myself, which, 5 as they never sold, I have the consolation of thinking were read only by the happy *few*. Some of my friends called this my weak side; but, alas! they had not, like me, made it the subject of long contemplation. The more I reflected upon it, the more important it appeared. 10 I even went a step beyond Whiston in displaying my principles; as he had engraven upon his wife's tomb that she was the *only* wife of William Whiston; so I wrote a similar epitaph for my wife, though still living, in which I extolled her prudence, economy, and obedi- 15 ence till death; and, having got it copied fair, with an elegant frame, it was placed over the chimney-piece, where it answered several very useful purposes. It admonished my wife of her duty to me and my fidelity to her; it inspired her with a passion for fame, and con- 20 stantly put her in mind of her end.

It was thus, perhaps, from hearing marriage so often recommended that my eldest son, just upon leaving college, fixed his affections upon the daughter of a neighbouring clergyman, who was a dignitary in the 25 Church, and in circumstances to give her a large fortune: but fortune was her smallest accomplishment. Miss Arabella Wilmot was allowed by all (except my two daughters) to be completely pretty. Her youth, health, and innocence were still heightened by a com- 30 plexion so transparent, and such a happy sensibility of

look, as even age could not gaze on with indifference. As Mr. Wilmot knew that I could make a very handsome settlement on my son, he was not averse to the match; so both families lived together in all that harmony which generally precedes an expected alliance. Being convinced by experience that the days of courtship are the most happy of our lives, I was willing enough to lengthen the period; and the various amusements which the young couple every day shared in each other's company seemed to increase their passion. We were generally awaked in the morning by music, and on fine days rode a-hunting. The hours between breakfast and dinner the ladies devoted to dress and study: they usually read a page and then gazed at themselves in the glass, which even philosophers might own often presented the page of greatest beauty. At dinner my wife took the lead; for, as she always insisted upon carving everything herself, it being her mother's way, she gave us upon these occasions the history of every dish. When we had dined, to prevent the ladies leaving us, I generally ordered the table to be removed; and sometimes, with the music-master's assistance, the girls would give us a very agreeable concert. Walking out, drinking tea, country dances, and forfeits shortened the rest of the day, without the assistance of cards, as I hated all manner of gaming, except backgammon, at which my old friend and I sometimes took a twopenny hit. Nor can I here pass over an ominous circumstance that happened the last time we played together: I only wanted to fling a quatre, and yet I threw deuce ace five times running.



"A very agreeable concert"

C. E. B. 1897

Some months were elapsed in this manner, till at last it was thought convenient to fix a day for the nuptials of the young couple, who seemed earnestly to desire it. During the preparations for the wedding, I need not describe the busy importance of my wife nor the sly 5 looks of my daughters: in fact, my attention was fixed on another object—the completing a tract which I intended shortly to publish in defence of my favourite principle. As I looked upon this as a masterpiece, both for argument and style, I could not, in the pride of my 10 heart, avoid showing it to my old friend, Mr. Wilmot, as I made no doubt of receiving his approbation; but not till too late I discovered that he was most violently attached to the contrary opinion, and with good reason; for he was at that time actually courting a fourth wife. 15 This, as may be expected, produced a dispute attended with some acrimony, which threatened to interrupt our intended alliance; but on the day before that appointed for the ceremony, we agreed to discuss the subject at large.

20

It was managed with proper spirit on both sides: He asserted that I was heterodox; I retorted the charge; he replied, and I rejoined. In the meantime, while the controversy was hottest, I was called out by one of my relations, who, with a face of concern, advised me 25 to give up the dispute, at least till my son's wedding was over. "How," cried I, "relinquish the cause of truth, and let him be a husband, already driven to the very verge of absurdity? You might as well advise me to give up my fortune as my argument." — "Your fortune," 30 returned my friend, "I am sorry to inform you, is almost

nothing. The merchant in town in whose hands your money was lodged has gone off, to avoid a statute of bankruptcy, and is thought not to have left a shilling in the pound. I was unwilling to shock you or the family
5 with the account till after the wedding; but now it may serve to moderate your warmth in the argument; for, I suppose, your own prudence will enforce the necessity of dissembling, at least till your son has the young lady's fortune secure." — "Well," returned I, "if what you tell
10 me be true, and if I am to be a beggar, it shall never make me a rascal, or induce me to disavow my principles. I'll go this moment and inform the company of my circumstances; and, as for the argument, I even here retract my former concessions in the old gentleman's
15 favour, nor will I allow him now to be an husband in any sense of the expression."

It would be endless to describe the different sensations of both families when I divulged the news of our misfortune; but what others felt was slight to what the
20 lovers appeared to endure. Mr. Wilmot, who seemed before sufficiently inclined to break off the match, was by this blow, soon determined: one virtue he had in perfection, which was prudence, too often the only one that is left us at seventy-two.

CHAPTER III.

A MIGRATION. THE FORTUNATE CIRCUMSTANCES OF OUR LIVES ARE GENERALLY FOUND AT LAST TO BE OF OUR OWN PROCURING.

THE only hope of our family now was that the report of our misfortune might be malicious or premature; but a letter from my agent in town soon came with a confirmation of every particular. The loss of fortune to myself alone would have been trifling; the only uneasiness I felt was for my family, who were to be humble without an education to render them callous to contempt.

Near a fortnight had passed before I attempted to restrain their affliction; for premature consolation is but the remembrancer of sorrow. During this interval, my thoughts were employed on some future means of supporting them; and at last a small cure of fifteen pounds a year was offered me in a distant neighbourhood, where I could still enjoy my principles without molestation. With this proposal I joyfully closed, having determined to increase my salary by managing a little farm.

Having taken this resolution, my next care was to get together the wrecks of my fortune; and, all debts col-

lected and paid, out of fourteen thousand pounds we had but four hundred remaining. My chief attention, therefore, was now to bring down the pride of my family to their circumstances; for I well knew that aspiring beggary is wretchedness itself. "You cannot be ignorant, my children," cried I, "that no prudence of ours could have prevented our late misfortune; but prudence may do much in disappointing its effects. We are now poor, my fondlings, and wisdom bids us conform to our humble situation. Let us then, without repining, give up those splendours with which numbers are wretched, and seek in humbler circumstances that peace with which all may be happy. The poor live pleasantly without our help; why, then, should not we learn to live without theirs? No, my children, let us from this moment give up all pretensions to gentility: we have still enough left for happiness if we are wise, and let us draw upon content for the deficiencies of fortune."

As my eldest son was bred a scholar, I determined to send him to town, where his abilities might contribute to our support and his own. The separation of friends and families is, perhaps, one of the most distressful circumstances attendant upon penury. The day soon arrived on which we were to disperse for the first time. My son, after taking leave of his mother and the rest, who mingled their tears with their kisses, came to ask a blessing from me. This I gave him from my heart, and which, added to five guineas, was all the patrimony I had now to bestow. "You are going, my boy," cried I, "to London on foot, in the manner Hooker, your great ancestor, travelled there before you. Take from me the

same horse that was given him by the good Bishop Jewel, this staff, and take this book too; it will be your comfort on the way; these two lines in it are worth a million: *I have been young, and now am old; yet never saw I the righteous man forsaken, or his seed begging 5 their bread.* Let this be your consolation as you travel on. Go, my boy; whatever be thy fortune, let me see thee once a year; still keep a good heart, and farewell." As he was possessed of integrity and honour, I was under no apprehensions from throwing him naked into the 10 amphitheatre of life; for I knew he would act a good part whether vanquished or victorious.

His departure only prepared the way for our own, which arrived a few days afterwards. The leaving a neighbourhood in which we had enjoyed so many hours 15 of tranquillity was not without a tear, which scarce fortitude itself could suppress. Besides, a journey of seventy miles to a family that had hitherto never been above ten from home filled us with apprehension; and the cries of the poor, who followed us for some miles, con- 20 tributed to increase it. The first day's journey brought us in safety within thirty miles of our future retreat, and we put up for the night at an obscure inn in a village by the way. When we were shown a room, I desired the landlord, in my usual way, to let us have his company, 25 with which he complied, as what he drank would increase the bill next morning. He knew, however, the whole neighbourhood to which I was removing, particularly Squire Thornhill, who was to be my landlord, and who lived within a few miles of the place. This gentleman 30 he described as one who desired to know little more of

the world than its pleasures, being particularly remarkable for his attachment for the fair sex. He observed that no virtue was able to resist his arts and assiduity, and that scarce a farmer's daughter within ten miles
5 round but what had found him successful and faithless. Though this account gave me some pain, it had a very different effect upon my daughters, whose features seemed to brighten with the expectation of an approaching triumph; nor was my wife less pleased and confident
10 of their allurements and virtue. While our thoughts were thus employed, the hostess entered the room to inform her husband that the strange gentleman, who had been two days in the house, wanted money, and could not satisfy them for his reckoning. "Want money!"
15 replied the host; "that must be impossible; for it was no later than yesterday he paid three guineas to our beadle to spare an old broken soldier that was to be whipped through the town for dog-stealing." The hostess, however, still persisting in her first assertion,
20 he was preparing to leave the room, swearing that he would be satisfied one way or another, when I begged the landlord would introduce me to a stranger of so much charity as he described. With this he complied, showing in a gentleman who seemed to be about thirty,
25 dressed in clothes that once were laced. His person was well formed, and his face marked with the lines of thinking. He had something short and dry in his address, and seemed not to understand ceremony, or to despise it. Upon the landlord's leaving the room, I
30 could not avoid expressing my concern to the stranger at seeing a gentleman in such circumstances, and offered

him my purse to satisfy the present demand. "I take it with all my heart, sir," replied he, "and am glad that a late oversight in giving what money I had about me has shown me that there are still some men like you. I must, however, previously entreat being informed of the name and residence of my benefactor, in order to repay him as soon as possible." In this I satisfied him fully, not only mentioning my name and late misfortunes, but the place to which I was going to remove. "This," cried he, "happens still more luckily than I hoped for, as I am going the same way myself, having been detained here two days by the floods, which I hope by to-morrow will be found passable." I testified the pleasure I should have in his company; and, my wife and daughters joining in entreaty, he was prevailed upon to stay supper. The stranger's conversation, which was at once pleasing and instructive, induced me to wish for a continuance of it; but it was now high time to retire and take refreshment against the fatigues of the following day.

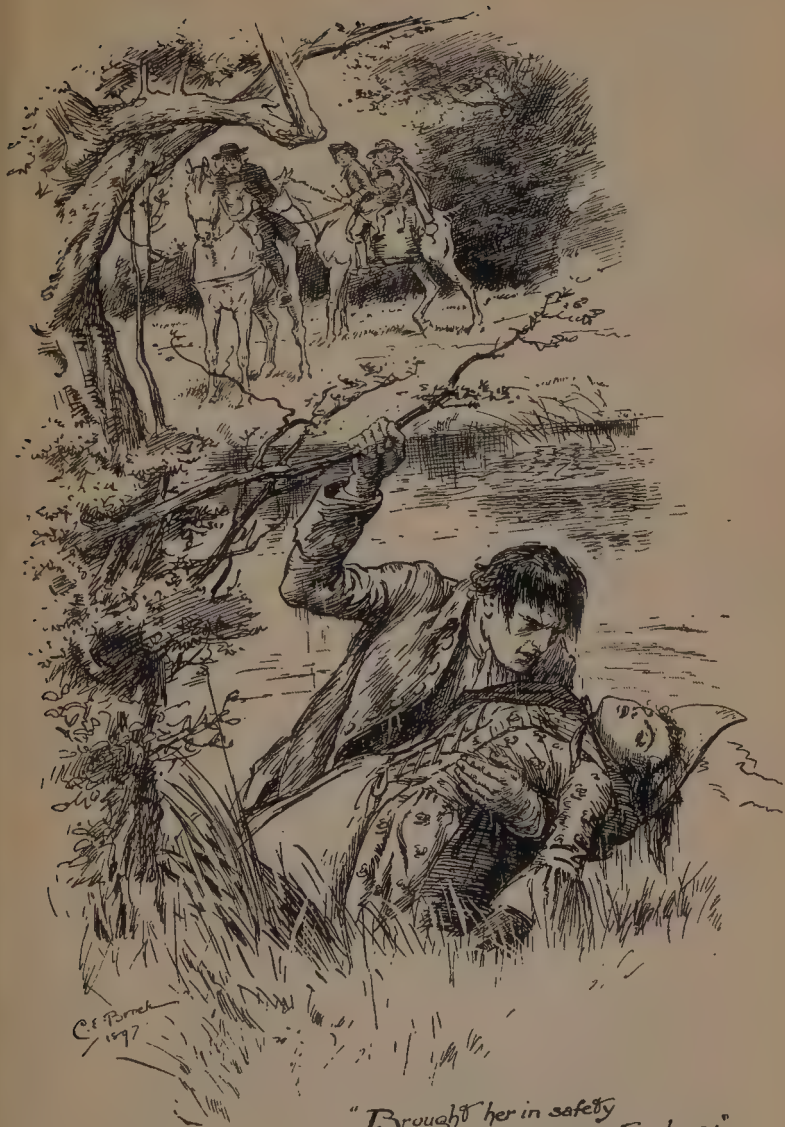
The next morning we all set forward together: my family on horseback, while Mr. Burchell, our new companion, walked along the footpath by the roadside, observing, with a smile, that as we were ill-mounted, he would be too generous to attempt leaving us behind. As the floods were not yet subsided, we were obliged to hire a guide, who trotted on before, Mr. Burchell and I bringing up the rear. We lightened the fatigues of the road with philosophical disputes, which he seemed to understand perfectly. But what surprised me most was, that though he was a money-borrower, he defended his opinions with as much obstinacy as if he had been my

patron. He now and then also informed me to whom the different seats belonged that lay in our view as we travelled the road. "That," cried he, pointing to a very magnificent house which stood at some distance, 5 "belongs to Mr. Thornhill, a young gentleman who enjoys a large fortune, though entirely dependent on the will of his uncle, Sir William Thornhill, a gentleman who, content with a little himself, permits his nephew to enjoy the rest, and chiefly resides in town." — 10 "What!" cried I, "is my young landlord then the nephew of a man whose virtues, generosity, and singularities are so universally known? I have heard Sir William Thornhill represented as one of the most generous, yet whimsical, men in the kingdom; a man of 15 consummate benevolence." — "Something, perhaps, too much so," replied Mr. Burchell; "at least, he carried benevolence to an excess when young; for his passions were then strong, and as they were all upon the side of virtue, they led it up to a romantic extreme. He early 20 began to aim at the qualifications of the soldier and scholar; was soon distinguished in the army, and had some reputation among men of learning. Adulation ever follows the ambitious; for such alone receive most pleasure from flattery. He was surrounded with crowds, 25 who showed him only one side of their character; so that he began to lose a regard for private interest in universal sympathy. He loved all mankind; for fortune prevented him from knowing that there were rascals. Physicians tell us of a disorder in which the whole body 30 is so exquisitely sensible that the slightest touch gives pain: what some have thus suffered in their persons,

this gentleman felt in his mind. The slightest distress, whether real or fictitious, touched him to the quick, and his soul laboured under a sickly sensibility of the miseries of others. Thus disposed to relieve, it will be easily conjectured, he found numbers disposed to solicit: 5 his profusions began to impair his fortune, but not his good-nature; that, indeed, was seen to increase as the other seemed to decay; he grew improvident as he grew poor; and though he talked like a man of sense, his actions were those of a fool. Still, however, being 10 surrounded with importunity, and no longer able to satisfy every request that was made him, instead of money he gave *promises*. They were all he had to bestow, and he had not resolution enough to give any man pain by a denial. By this he drew round him 15 crowds of dependents, whom he was sure to disappoint, yet wished to relieve. These hung upon him for a time, and left him with merited reproaches and contempt. But in proportion as he became contemptible to others, he became despicable to himself. His mind had leaned 20 upon their adulation, and, that support taken away, he could find no pleasure in the applause of his heart, which he had never learned to reverence. The world now began to wear a different aspect: the flattery of his friends began to dwindle into simple approbation; ap- 25 probation soon took the more friendly form of advice; and advice, when rejected, produced their reproaches. He now, therefore, found that such friends as benefits had gathered round him were little estimable; he now found that a man's own heart must be ever given to gain 30 that of another. I now found that — that — I forgot

what I was going to observe; in short, sir, he resolved to respect himself, and laid down a plan of restoring his falling fortune. For this purpose, in his own whimsical manner, he travelled through Europe on foot, and now, though he has scarce attained the age of thirty, his circumstances are more affluent than ever. At present his bounties are more rational and moderate than before; but still he preserves the character of an humourist, and finds most pleasure in eccentric virtues."

10 My attention was so much taken up by Mr. Burchell's account that I scarce looked forward, as he went along, till we were alarmed by the cries of my family, when, turning, I perceived my youngest daughter in the midst of a rapid stream, thrown from her horse, and struggling
15 with the torrent. She had sunk twice, nor was it in my power to disengage myself in time to bring her relief. My sensations were even too violent to permit my attempting her rescue; she must have certainly perished, had not my companion, perceiving her danger,
20 instantly plunged in to her relief, and, with some difficulty, brought her in safety to the opposite shore. By taking the current a little farther up, the rest of the family got safely over, where we had an opportunity of joining our acknowledgments to hers. Her gratitude
25 may be more readily imagined than described: she thanked her deliverer more with looks than words, and continued to lean upon his arm, as if still willing to receive assistance. My wife also hoped one day to have the pleasure of returning his kindness at her own
30 house. Thus, after we were refreshed at the next inn, and had dined together, as Mr. Burchell was going to a



"Brought her in safety
to the opposite shore"

different part of the country, he took leave, and we pursued our journey, my wife observing as he went that she liked him extremely, and protesting that if he had birth and fortune to entitle him to match into such a family as ours, she knew no man she would sooner fix 5 upon. I could not but smile to hear her talk in this lofty strain; but I was never much displeased with those harmless delusions that tend to make us more happy.

CHAPTER IV.

A PROOF THAT EVEN THE HUMBLEST FORTUNE MAY GRANT
HAPPINESS, WHICH DEPENDS, NOT ON CIRCUMSTANCE,
BUT CONSTITUTION.

THE place of our retreat was in a little neighbourhood consisting of farmers who tilled their own grounds, and were equal strangers to opulence and poverty. As they had almost all the conveniences of life within themselves, they seldom visited towns or cities in search of superfluity. Remote from the polite, they still retained the primeval simplicity of manners; and, frugal by habit, they scarce knew that temperance was a virtue. They wrought with cheerfulness on days of labour, but observed festivals as intervals of idleness and pleasure. They kept up the Christmas carol, sent true-love-knots on Valentine morning, ate pancakes on Shrovetide, showed their wit on the first of April, and religiously cracked nuts on Michaelmas-eve. Being apprised of our approach, the whole neighbourhood came out to meet their minister, dressed in their finest clothes, and preceded by a pipe and tabor: a feast, also, was provided for our reception, at which we sat cheerfully down; and what the conversation wanted in wit was made up in laughter.

Our little habitation was situated at the foot of a sloping hill, sheltered with a beautiful underwood behind, and a prattling river before: on one side a meadow, on the other a green. My farm consisted of about twenty acres of excellent land, having given an hundred pound 5 for my predecessor's good-will. Nothing could exceed the neatness of my little enclosures, the elms and hedges appearing with inexpressible beauty. My house consisted of but one story, and was covered with thatch, which gave it an air of great snugness. The walls on the 10 inside were nicely whitewashed, and my daughters undertook to adorn them with pictures of their own designing. Though the same room served us for parlour and kitchen, that only made it the warmer. Besides, as it was kept with the utmost neatness — the dishes, plates, and cop- 15 pers being well scoured, and all disposed in bright rows on the shelves — the eye was agreeably relieved, and did not want richer furniture. There were three other apartments — one for my wife and me; another for our two daughters within our own; and the third, with two beds, 20 for the rest of the children.

The little republic to which I gave laws was regulated in the following manner: — by sunrise we all assembled in our common apartment, the fire being previously kindled by the servant. After we had saluted each other 25 with proper ceremony — for I always thought fit to keep up some mechanical forms of good breeding, without which freedom ever destroys friendship — we all bent in gratitude to that Being who gave us another day. This duty being performed, my son and I went to pursue our 30 usual industry abroad, while my wife and daughters

employed themselves in providing breakfast, which was always ready at a certain time. I allowed half an hour for this meal, and an hour for dinner, which time was taken up in innocent mirth between my wife and daughters, and in philosophical arguments between my son and me.

As we rose with the sun, so we never pursued our labours after it was gone down, but returned home to the expecting family, where smiling looks, a neat hearth, and pleasant fire were prepared for our reception. Nor were we without guests; sometimes Farmer Flamborough, our talkative neighbour, and often the blind piper, would pay us a visit, and taste our gooseberry wine, for the making of which we had lost neither the receipt nor the reputation. These harmless people had several ways of being good company; while one played, the other would sing some soothing ballad — Johnny Armstrong's Last Good-night, or the Cruelty of Barbara Allen. The night was concluded in the manner we began the morning, my youngest boys being appointed to read the lessons of the day, and he that read loudest, distinctest, and best was to have an halfpenny on Sunday to put into the poor's box.

When Sunday came, it was, indeed, a day of finery, which all my sumptuary edicts could not restrain. How well soever I fancied my lectures against pride had conquered the vanity of my daughters, yet I still found them secretly attached to all their former finery: they still loved laces, ribands, bugles, and catgut; my wife herself retained a passion for her crimson paduasoy, because I formerly happened to say it became her.

The first Sunday, in particular, their behaviour served to mortify me. I had desired my girls, the preceding night, to be dressed early the next day, for I always loved to be at church a good while before the rest of the congregation. They punctually obeyed my direc- 5 tions; but when we were to assemble in the morning at breakfast, down came my wife and daughters, dressed out in all their former splendour: their hair plastered up with pomatum, their faces patched to taste, their trains bundled up in a heap behind, and rustling at 10 every motion. I could not help smiling at their vanity, particularly that of my wife, from whom I expected more discretion. In this exigence, therefore, my only resource was to order my son, with an important air, to call our coach. The girls were amazed at the command, 15 but I repeated it, with more solemnity than before. "Surely, my dear, you jest," cried my wife: "we can walk it perfectly well; we want no coach to carry us now." — "You mistake, child," returned I, "we do want a coach; for if we walk to church in this trim, the very 20 children in the parish will hoot after us." — "Indeed," replied my wife, "I always imagined that my Charles was fond of seeing his children neat and handsome about him." — "You may be as neat as you please," interrupted I, "and I shall love you the better for it; but all this is 25 not neatness, but frippery. These ruffings, and pinkings, and patchings will only make us hated by all the wives of our neighbours. No, my children," continued I, more gravely, "those gowns may be altered into something of a plainer cut; for finery is very unbecoming in 30 us who want the means of decency. I do not know

whether such flouncing and shredding is becoming even in the rich, if we consider, upon a moderate calculation, that the nakedness of the indigent world might be clothed from the trimmings of the vain."

5 This remonstrance had the proper effect; they went with great composure, that very instant, to change their dress; and the next day I had the satisfaction of finding my daughters, at their own request, employed in cutting up their trains into Sunday waistcoats for Dick and Bill,
10 the two little ones, and, what was still more satisfactory, the gowns seemed improved by this curtailing.

CHAPTER V.

A NEW AND GREAT ACQUAINTANCE INTRODUCED. WHAT
WE PLACE MOST HOPES UPON, GENERALLY PROVES
MOST FATAL.

AT a small distance from the house, my predecessor had made a seat, overshadowed by a hedge of hawthorn and honeysuckle. Here, when the weather was fine and our labour soon finished, we usually sat together, to enjoy an extensive landscape, in the calm of the evening. 5 Here, too, we drank tea, which now was become an occasional banquet; and, as we had it but seldom, it diffused a new joy, the preparations for it being made with no small share of bustle and ceremony. On these occasions our two little ones always read for us, and they 10 were regularly served after we had done. Sometimes, to give a variety to our amusements, the girls sang to the guitar; and, while they thus formed a little concert, my wife and I would stroll down the sloping field, that was embellished with bluebells and centaury, talk of our 15 children with rapture, and enjoy the breeze that wafted both health and harmony.

In this manner we began to find that every situation in life may bring its own peculiar pleasures: every morning waked us to a repetition of toil; but the evening 20 repaid it with vacant hilarity.

It was about the beginning of autumn, on a holiday — for I kept such as intervals of relaxation from labour — that I had drawn out my family to our usual place of amusement, and our young musicians began their usual concert. As we were thus engaged, we saw a stag bound nimbly by, within about twenty paces of where we were sitting, and by its panting it seemed pressed by the hunters. We had not much time to reflect upon the poor animal's distress, when we perceived the dogs and horsemen come sweeping along at some distance behind, and making the very path it had taken. I was instantly for returning in with my family; but either curiosity or surprise, or some more hidden motive, held my wife and daughters to their seats. The huntsman, who rode foremost, passed us with great swiftness, followed by four or five persons more, who seemed in equal haste. At last a young gentleman, of more genteel appearance than the rest, came forward, and, for a while regarding us, instead of pursuing the chase, stopped short, and giving his horse to a servant who attended, approached us with a careless, superior air. He seemed to want no introduction, but was going to salute my daughters as one certain of a kind reception; but they had early learned the lesson of looking presumption out of countenance. Upon which he let us know that his name was Thornhill, and that he was owner of the estate that lay for some extent round us. He again, therefore, offered to salute the female part of the family, and such was the power of fortune and fine clothes that he found no second repulse. As his address, though confident, was easy, we soon became more familiar; and, perceiving musical





"Mr Thornhill then
took up the guitar himself"

instruments lying near, he begged to be favoured with a song. As I did not approve of such disproportioned acquaintances, I winked upon my daughters in order to prevent their compliance; but my hint was counteracted by one from their mother; so that, with a cheerful air, 5 they gave us a favourite song of Dryden's. Mr. Thornhill seemed highly delighted with their performance and choice, and then took up the guitar himself. He played but very indifferently; however, my eldest daughter repaid his former applause with interest, and assured him 10 that his tones were louder than even those of her master. At this compliment he bowed, which she returned with a courtesy. He praised her taste, and she commended his understanding: an age could not have made them better acquainted; while the fond mother, too, equally 15 happy, insisted upon her landlord's stepping in and tasting a glass of her gooseberry. The whole family seemed earnest to please him: my girls attempted to entertain him with topics they thought most modern, while Moses, on the contrary, gave him a question or 20 two from the ancients, for which he had the satisfaction of being laughed at; my little ones were no less busy, and fondly stuck close to the stranger. All my endeavours could scarce keep their dirty fingers from handling and tarnishing the lace on his clothes, and lifting up the 25 flaps of his pocket-holes, to see what was there. At the approach of evening he took leave; but not till he had requested permission to renew his visit, which, as he was our landlord, we most readily agreed to.

As soon as he was gone, my wife called a council on 30 the conduct of the day. She was of opinion that it was

a most fortunate hit, for that she had known even stranger things than that brought to bear. She hoped again to see the day in which we might hold up our heads with the best of them; and concluded, she protested she could
5 see no reason why the two Miss Wrinklers should marry great fortunes and her children get none. As this last argument was directed to me, I protested I could see no reason for it neither, nor why Mr. Simkins got the ten-thousand-pound prize in the lottery, and we sat down
10 with a blank. "I protest, Charles," cried my wife, "this is the way you always damp my girls and me when we are in spirits. Tell me, Sophy, my dear, what do you think of our new visitor? Don't you think he seemed to be good-natured?" — "Immensely so, in-
15 deed, mamma," replied she. "I think he has a great deal to say upon everything, and is never at a loss; and the more trifling the subject, the more he has to say." — "Yes," cried Olivia, "he is well enough for a man; but, for my own part, I don't much like him, he is so
20 extremely impudent and familiar; but on the guitar he is shocking." These two last speeches I interpreted by contraries. I found by this that Sophia internally despised as much as Olivia secretly admired him. "Whatever may be your opinions of him, my children," cried
25 I, "to confess the truth, he has not prepossessed me in his favour. Disproportioned friendships ever terminate in disgust; and I thought, notwithstanding all his ease, that he seemed perfectly sensible of the distance between us. Let us keep to companions of our own rank. There
30 is no character more contemptible than a man that is a fortune-hunter; and I can see no reason why fortune-

hunting women should not be contemptible too. Thus, at best, we shall be contemptible if his views are honourable; but if they be otherwise! — I should shudder but to think of that! It is true I have no apprehensions from the conduct of my children, but I think there are 5 some from his character.” I would have proceeded but for the interruption of a servant from the Squire, who, with his compliments, sent us a side of venison, and a promise to dine with us some days after. This well-timed present pleaded more powerfully in his favour 10 than anything I had to say could obviate. I therefore continued silent, satisfied with just having pointed out danger, and leaving it to their own discretion to avoid it. That virtue which requires to be ever guarded is scarce worth the sentinel. 15

CHAPTER VI.

THE HAPPINESS OF A COUNTRY FIRESIDE.

As we carried on the former dispute with some degree of warmth, in order to accommodate matters, it was universally agreed that we should have a part of the venison for supper, and the girls undertook the task
5 with alacrity. "I am sorry," cried I, "that we have no neighbour or stranger to take a part in this good cheer: feasts of this kind acquire a double relish from hospitality." — "Bless me," cried my wife, "here comes our good friend, Mr. Burchell, that saved our Sophia,
10 and that ran you down fairly in the argument." — "Confute me in argument, child!" cried I. "You mistake there, my dear; I believe there are but few that can do that: I never dispute your abilities at making a goose-pie, and I beg you'll leave argument to me." As I
15 spoke, poor Mr. Burchell entered the house, and was welcomed by the family, who shook him heartily by the hand, while little Dick officiously reached him a chair.

I was pleased with the poor man's friendship for two reasons: because I knew that he wanted mine, and I
20 knew him to be friendly as far as he was able. He was

known in our neighbourhood by the character of the poor Gentleman that would do no good when he was young, though he was not yet thirty. He would at intervals talk with great good sense; but in general he was fondest of the company of children, whom he used to call harmless little men. He was famous, I found, for singing them ballads and telling them stories; and seldom went out without something in his pockets for them — a piece of gingerbread or a halfpenny whistle. He generally came for a few days into our neighbourhood once a year, and lived upon the neighbours' hospitality. He sat down to supper among us, and my wife was not sparing of her gooseberry wine. The tale went round; he sung us old songs, and gave the children the story of the Buck of Beverland, with the history of Patient Grissel, the adventures of Catskin, and then Fair Rosamond's Bower. Our cock, which always crew at eleven, now told us it was time for repose; but an unforeseen difficulty started about lodging the stranger — all our beds were already taken up, and it was too late to send him to the next alehouse. In this dilemma, little Dick offered him his part of the bed if his brother Moses would let him lie with him; "and I," cried Bill, "will give Mr. Burchell my part if my sisters will take me to theirs." — "Well done, my good children," cried I, "hospitality is one of the first Christian duties. The beast retires to its shelter and the bird flies to its nest, but helpless man can only find refuge from his fellow-creature. The greatest stranger in this world was He that came to save it. He never had an house, as if willing to see what hospitality was left remaining amongst us.

Deborah, my dear," cried I to my wife, "give those boys a lump of sugar each, and let Dick's be the largest, because he spoke first."

In the morning early I called out my whole family to
5 help at saving an after-growth of hay; and our guest offering his assistance, he was accepted among the number. Our labours went on lightly; we turned the swath to the wind. I went foremost, and the rest followed in due succession. I could not avoid, however,
10 observing the assiduity of Mr. Burchell in assisting my daughter Sophia in her part of the task. When he had finished his own, he would join in hers, and enter into a close conversation; but I had too good an opinion of Sophia's understanding, and was too well convinced of
15 her ambition, to be under any uneasiness from a man of broken fortune. When we were finished for the day, Mr. Burchell was invited as on the night before; but he refused, as he was to lie that night at a neighbour's, to whose child he was carrying a whistle. When gone, our
20 conversation at supper turned upon our late unfortunate guest. "What a strong instance," said I, "is that poor man of the miseries attending a youth of levity and extravagance. He by no means wants sense, which only serves to aggravate his former folly. Poor forlorn creat-
25 ure, where are now the revellers, the flatterers, that he could once inspire and command? Gone, perhaps, to attend the bagnio pander, grown rich by his extravagance. They once praised him, and now they applaud the pander; their former raptures at his wit are now
30 converted into sarcasms at his folly. He is poor, and perhaps deserves poverty, for he has neither the ambi-

tion to be independent nor the skill to be useful." Prompted perhaps by some secret reasons, I delivered this observation with too much acrimony, which my Sophia gently reproved. "Whatsoever his former conduct may have been, papa, his circumstances should 5 exempt him from censure now. His present indigence is a sufficient punishment for former folly; and I have heard my papa himself say that we should never strike our unnecessary blow at a victim over whom Providence holds the scourge of its resentment." — "You are right, 10 Sophy," cried my son Moses, "and one of the ancients finely represents so malicious a conduct by the attempts of a rustic to flay Marsyas, whose skin, the fable tells us, had been wholly stripped off by another. Besides; I don't know if this poor man's situation be so bad as 15 my father would represent it. We are not to judge of the feelings of others by what we might feel in their place. However dark the habitation of the mole to our eyes, yet the animal itself finds the apartment sufficiently lightsome. And, to confess a truth, this man's mind 20 seems fitted to his station, for I never heard any one more sprightly than he was to-day when he conversed with you." This was said without the least design; however, it excited a blush, which she strove to cover by an affected laugh, assuring him that she scarce took 25 any notice of what he said to her, but that she believed he might once have been a very fine gentleman. The readiness with which she undertook to vindicate herself, and her blushing, were symptoms I did not internally approve; but I repressed my suspicions. 30

As we expected our landlord the next day, my wife

went to make the venison pasty. Moses sat reading, while I taught the little one: my daughters seemed equally busy with the rest, and I observed them for a good while cooking something over the fire. I at first
5 supposed they were assisting their mother, but little Dick informed me in a whisper that they were making a *wash* for the face. Washes of all kinds I had a natural antipathy to, for I knew that instead of mending the complexion, they spoiled it. I therefore approached
10 my chair by sly degrees to the fire, and, grasping the poker as if it wanted mending, seemingly by accident, overturned the whole composition, and it was too late to begin another.

CHAPTER VII.

A TOWN WIT DESCRIBED. THE DULLEST FELLOWS MAY
LEARN TO BE COMICAL FOR A NIGHT OR TWO.

WHEN the morning arrived on which we were to entertain our young landlord, it may be easily supposed what provisions were exhausted to make an appearance. It may also be conjectured that my wife and daughters expanded their gayest plumage upon this occasion. Mr. 5 Thornhill came with a couple of friends, his chaplain and feeder. The servants, who were numerous, he politely ordered to the next alehouse; but my wife, in the triumph of her heart, insisted on entertaining them all; for which, by-the-bye, our family was pinched for 10 three weeks after. As Mr. Burchell had hinted to us the day before that he was making some proposals of marriage to Miss Wilmot, my son George's former mistress, this a good deal damped the heartiness of his reception. But accident in some measure relieved our 15 embarrassment; for one of the company happening to mention her name, Mr. Thornhill observed, with an oath, that he never knew anything more absurd than calling such a fright a beauty: "For strike me ugly," continued he, "if I should not find as much pleasure in 20

choosing my mistress by the information of a lamp under the clock of St. Dunstan's!" At this he laughed, and so did we: the jests of the rich are ever successful. Olivia, too, could not avoid whispering, loud enough to 5 be heard, that he had an infinite fund of humour.

After dinner I began with my usual toast, the Church; for this I was thanked by the chaplain, as he said the Church was the only mistress of his affections. "Come, tell us honestly, Frank," said the Squire, with his usual 10 archness, "suppose the Church, your present mistress, dressed in lawn sleeves, on one hand, and Miss Sophia, with no lawn about her, on the other, which would you be for?" — "For both, to be sure," cried the chaplain. — "Right, Frank," cried the Squire, "for may this 15 glass suffocate me, but a fine girl is worth all the priestcraft in the creation. For what are tithes and tricks but an imposition? — all a confounded imposture, and I can prove it." — "I wish you would," cried my son Moses, "and I think," continued he, "that I should be 20 able to answer you." — "Very well, sir," cried the Squire, who immediately smoked him, and winking on the rest of the company to prepare us for the sport, "if you are for a cool argument upon that subject, I am ready to accept the challenge. And, first, whether are 25 you for managing it analogically or dialogically?" — "I am for managing it rationally," cried Moses, quite happy at being permitted to dispute. — "Good again," cried the Squire, "and, firstly, of the first, I hope you'll not deny that whatever is, is. If you don't grant me that, 30 I can go no further." — "Why," returned Moses, "I think I may grant that, and make the best of it." — "I

hope, too," returned the other, "you'll grant that a part is less than the whole." — "I grant that, too," cried Moses; "it is but just and reasonable." — "I hope," cried the Squire, "you will not deny that the two angles of a triangle are equal to two right ones." — "Nothing 5 can be plainer," returned t'other, and looked round with his usual importance. — "Very well," cried the Squire, speaking very quick, "the premises being thus settled, I proceed to observe that the concatenation of self-existence, proceeding in a reciprocal duplicate 10 ratio, naturally produces a problematical dialogism, which in some measure proves that the essence of spirituality may be referred to the second predicable." — "Hold, hold!" cried the other, "I deny that. Do you think that I can thus tamely submit to such heterodox 15 doctrines?" — "What," replied the Squire, as if in a passion, "not submit! Answer me one plain question: Do you think Aristotle right when he says that relatives are related?" — "Undoubtedly," replied the other. — "If so, then," cried the Squire, "answer me directly 20 to what I propose: Whether do you judge the analytical investigation of the first part of my enthymeme deficient secundum quoad, or quoad minus; and give me your reasons; give me your reasons, I say, directly." — "I protest," cried Moses, "I don't rightly comprehend 25 the force of your reasoning; but if it be reduced to one simple proposition, I fancy it may then have an answer." — "Oh, sir," cried the Squire, "I am your most humble servant; I find you want me to furnish you with argument and intellects too. No, sir, there 30 I protest you are too hard for me." This effectually

raised the laugh against poor Moses, who sat the only dismal figure in a group of merry faces; nor did he offer a single syllable more during the whole entertainment.

5 But though all this gave me no pleasure, it had a very different effect upon Olivia, who mistook it for humour, though but a mere act of the memory. She thought him, therefore, a very fine gentleman; and such as consider what powerful ingredients a good figure, fine clothes,
10 and fortune are in that character, will easily forgive her. Mr. Thornhill, notwithstanding his real ignorance, talked with ease, and could expatiate upon the common topics of conversation with fluency. It is not surprising, then, that such talents should win the affections of
15 a girl who, by education, was taught to value an appearance in herself, and consequently to set a value upon it in another.

Upon his departure, we again entered into a debate upon the merits of our young landlord. As he directed
20 his looks and conversation to Olivia, it was no longer doubted but that she was the object that induced him to be our visitor. Nor did she seem to be much displeased at the innocent raillery of her brother and sister upon this occasion. Even Deborah herself seemed to
25 share the glory of the day, and exulted in her daughter's victory as if it were her own. "And now, my dear," cried she to me, "I'll fairly own that it was I that instructed my girls to encourage our landlord's addresses. I had always some ambition, and you now see that I was
30 right; for who knows how this may end?" — "Ay, who knows that, indeed," answered I, with a groan: "for my

pari, I don't much like it ; and I could have been better pleased with one that was poor and honest than this fine gentleman, with his fortune and infidelity ; for depend on't, if he be what I suspect him, no freethinker shall ever have a child of mine."

5

"Sure, father," cried Moses, "you are too severe in this, for Heaven will never arraign him for what he thinks, but for what he does. Every man has a thousand vicious thoughts, which arise without his power to suppress. Thinking freely of religion may be involuntary 10 with this gentleman ; so that, allowing his sentiments to be wrong, yet as he is purely passive in his assent, he is no more to be blamed for his errors than the governor of a city without walls for the shelter he is obliged to afford an invading enemy."

15

"True, my son," cried I ; "but if the governor invites the enemy there, he is justly culpable ; and such is always the case with those who embrace error. The vice does not lie in assenting to the proofs they see, but in being blind to many of the proofs that offer. So that, 20 though our erroneous opinions be involuntary when formed, yet, as we have been wilfully corrupt, or very negligent in forming them, we deserve punishment for our vice, or contempt for our folly."

My wife now kept up the conversation, though not the 25 argument : she observed that several very prudent men of our acquaintance were freethinkers, and made very good husbands ; and she knew some sensible girls that had skill enough to make converts of their spouses. "And who knows, my dear," continued she, "what Olivia 30 may be able to do? The girl has a great deal to say

upon every subject, and, to my knowledge, is very well skilled in controversy."

"Why, my dear, what controversy can she have read?" cried I. "It does not occur to me that I ever put such 5 books into her hands: you certainly overrate her merit." — "Indeed, papa," replied Olivia, "she does not: I have read a great deal of controversy. I have read the disputes between Thwackum and Square, the controversy between Robinson Crusoe and Friday the savage, and I 10 am now employed in reading the controversy in Religious Courtship." — "Very well," cried I; "that's a good girl. I find you are perfectly qualified for making converts; and so go help your mother to make the gooseberry-pie."

CHAPTER VIII.

AN AMOUR WHICH PROMISES LITTLE GOOD FORTUNE, YET
MAY BE PRODUCTIVE OF MUCH.

THE next morning we were again visited by Mr. Burchell, though I began, for certain reasons, to be displeased with the frequency of his return ; but I could not refuse him my company and fireside. It is true, his labour more than requited his entertainment ; for he wrought among us with vigour, and, either in the meadow or at the hay-rick, put himself foremost. Besides, he had always something amusing to say that lessened our toil, and was at once so out of the way, and yet so sensible, that I loved, laughed at, and pitied him. My only dislike arose from an attachment he discovered to my daughter : he would, in a jesting manner, call her his little mistress ; and when he bought each of the girls a set of ribands, hers was the finest. I knew not how, but he every day seemed to become more amiable, his wit to improve, and his simplicity to assume the superior airs of wisdom.

Our family dined in the field, and we sat, or rather reclined, round a temperate repast, our cloth spread upon the hay, while Mr. Burchell gave cheerfulness to the feast. To heighten our satisfaction, two blackbirds

answered each other from opposite hedges, the familiar redbreast came and pecked the crumbs from our hands, and every sound seemed but the echo of tranquillity. "I never sit thus," says Sophia, "but I think of the two
5 lovers, so sweetly described by Mr. Gay, who were struck dead in each other's arms. There is something so pathetic in the description that I have read it an hundred times with new rapture." — "In my opinion," cried my son, "the finest strokes in that description are much
10 below those in the *Acis and Galatea* of Ovid. The Roman poet understands the use of *contrast* better, and upon that figure artfully managed all strength in the pathetic depends." — "It is remarkable," cried Mr. Burchell, "that both the poets you mention have equally
15 contributed to introduce a false taste into their respective countries by loading all their lines with epithet. Men of little genius found them most easily imitated in their defects; and English poetry, like that in the latter empire of Rome, is nothing at present but a combination
20 of luxuriant images, without plot or connection — a string of epithets that improve the sound, without carrying on the sense. But perhaps, madam, while I thus reprehend others, you'll think it just that I should give them an opportunity to retaliate; and, indeed, I have made this
25 remark only to have an opportunity of introducing to the company a ballad which, whatever be its other defects, is, I think, at least free from those I have mentioned."

A BALLAD.

“TURN, gentle Hermit of the dale,
And guide my lonely way
To where yon taper cheers the vale
With hospitable ray.

“For here, forlorn and lost, I tread, 5
With fainting steps and slow —
Where wilds, immeasurably spread,
Seem lengthening as I go.”

“Forbear, my son,” the Hermit cries,
“To tempt the dangerous gloom; 10
For yonder faithless phantom flies
To lure thee to thy doom.

“Here to the houseless child of want
My door is open still;
And, though my portion is but scant, 15
I give it with good will.

“Then turn to-night, and freely share
Whate’er my cell bestows;
My rushy couch and frugal fare,
My blessing and repose. 20

“No flocks that range the valley free,
To slaughter I condemn;
Taught by that Power that pities me,
I learn to pity them:

“But from the mountain’s grassy side 25
A guiltless feast I bring;
A scrip with herbs and fruits supplied,
And water from the spring.

“Then, pilgrim, turn; thy cares forego;
All earth-born cares are wrong:
‘Man wants but little here below,
Nor wants that little long.’”

5 Soft as the dew from heaven descends,
 His gentle accents fell:
The modest stranger lowly bends,
 And follows to the cell.

10 Far in a wilderness obscure,
 The lonely mansion lay,
A refuge to the neighbouring poor
 And strangers led astray.

15 No stores beneath its humble thatch
 Requir'd a master's care;
The wicket, opening with a latch,
 Received the harmless pair.

20 And now, when busy crowds retire
 To take their ev'ning rest,
The Hermit trimm'd his little fire,
 And cheered his pensive guest:

 And spread his vegetable store,
 And gaily press'd, and smiled;
And, skill'd in legendary lore,
 The lingering hours beguil'd.

25 Around, in sympathetic mirth,
 Its tricks the kitten tries;
The cricket chirrups in the hearth,
 The crackling faggot flies.

But nothing could a charm impart
To soothe the stranger's woe;
For grief was heavy at his heart,
And tears began to flow.

His rising cares the Hermit spied, 5
With answering care oppresst;
"And whence, unhappy youth," he cried,
"The sorrows of thy breast ?

"From better habitations spurn'd
Reluctant dost thou rove ? 10
Or grieve for friendship unreturn'd,
Or unregarded love ?

"Alas! the joys that fortune brings
Are trifling, and decay ;
And those who prize the paltry things 15
More trifling still than they.

"And what is friendship but a name;
A charm that lulls to sleep ;
A shade that follows wealth or fame,
But leaves the wretch to weep ? 20

"And love is still an emptier sound,
The modern fair one's jest :
On earth unseen, or only found
To warm the turtle's nest.

"For shame, fond youth, thy sorrows hush, 25
And spurn the sex," he said ;
But while he spoke, a rising blush
His love-lorn guest betray'd.

Surpris'd he sees new beauties rise,
Swift mantling to the view—
Like colours o'er the morning skies,
As bright, as transient too.

5 The bashful look, the rising breast
 Alternate spread alarms :
The lovely stranger stands confest
 A maid in all her charms.

10 “And, ah ! forgive a stranger rude,
 A wretch forlorn,” she cried ;
 “Whose feet unhallow'd thus intrude
 Where Heaven and you reside.

15 “But let a maid thy pity share,
 Whom love has taught to stray ;
Who seeks for rest, but finds despair
 Companion of her way.

20 “My father liv'd beside the Tyne,
 A wealthy lord was he ;
And all his wealth was mark'd as mine ;
 He had but only me.

 “To win me from his tender arms,
 Unnumber'd suitors came ;
Who prais'd me for imputed charms,
 And felt or feign'd, a flame.

25 “Each hour a mercenary crowd
 With richest offers strove ;
Amongst the rest young Edwin bow'd,
 But never talk'd of love.

“In humble, simplest habit clad,
No wealth nor power had he ;
Wisdom and worth were all he had,
But these were all to me.

“And when, beside me in the dale,
He caroll’d lays of love,
His breath lent fragrance to the gale
And music to the grove.

“The blossom opening to the day,
The dews of heaven refin’d,
Could nought of purity display
To emulate his mind.

“The dew, the blossom on the tree,
With charms inconstant shine;
Their charms were his, but, woe to me !
Their constancy was mine.

“For still I tried each fickle art,
Importunate and vain;
And while his passion touched my heart,
I triumph’d in his pain.

“Till, quite dejected with my scorn,
He left me to my pride;
And sought a solitude forlorn,
In secret, where he died.

“But mine the sorrow, mine the fault,
And well my life shall pay;
I’ll seek the solitude he sought,
And stretch me where he lay.

"And there, forlorn, despairing, hid,
 I'll lay me down and die;
 'Twas so for me that Edwin did,
 And so for him will I."

5 "Forbid it, Heaven!" the Hermit cried,
 And clasped her to his breast;
 The wond'ring fair one turned to chide,—
 'Twas Edwin's self that pressed.

10 "Turn, Angelina, ever dear,
 My charmer, turn to see
 Thy own, thy long-lost Edwin here,
 Restored to love and thee.

15 "Thus let me hold thee to my heart,
 And ev'ry care resign.
 And shall we never, never part,
 My life, my all that's mine?"


"No; never from this hour to part,
 We'll live and love so true;
 The sigh that rends thy constant heart
 20 Shall break thy Edwin's too."

While this ballad was reading, Sophia seemed to mix an air of tenderness with her approbation: But our tranquillity was soon disturbed by the report of a gun just by us, and immediately after a man was seen bursting through
 25 the hedge to take up the game he had killed. This sportsman was the Squire's chaplain, who had shot one of the blackbirds that so agreeably entertained us. So loud a report, and so near, startled my daughters; and I



"The gentleman came up
and asked pardon for having disturbed us".

could perceive that Sophia, in the fright, had thrown herself into Mr. Burchell's arms for protection. The gentleman came up and asked pardon for having disturbed us, affirming that he was ignorant of our being so near. He therefore sat down by my youngest daughter, and, sports- 5 man-like, offered her what he had killed that morning. She was going to refuse, but a private look from her mother soon induced her to correct the mistake and accept his present, though with some reluctance. My wife, as usual, discovered her pride in a whisper, observ- 10 ing that Sophy had made a conquest of the chaplain, as well as her sister had of the Squire. I suspected, however, with more probability, that her affections were placed upon a different object. The chaplain's errand was to inform us that Mr. Thornhill had provided music 15 and refreshments, and intended that night giving the young ladies a ball by moonlight on the grass-plot before our door. "Nor can I deny," continued he, "but I have an interest in being first to deliver this message, as I expect for my reward to be honoured with Miss Sophy's 20 hand as a partner." To this my girl replied that she should have no objection, if she could do it with honour. "But here," continued she, "is a gentleman," looking at Mr. Burchell, "who has been my companion in the task for the day, and it is fit he should share in its amusements." 25 Mr. Burchell returned her a compliment for her intentions ; but resigned her up to the chaplain, adding that he was to go that night five miles, being invited to an harvest supper. His refusal appeared to me a little extraordinary, nor could I conceive how so sensible a girl as my youngest 30 could thus prefer a man of broken fortunes to one whose



expectations were much greater. But as men are most capable of distinguishing merit in women, so the ladies often form the truest judgments of us. The two sexes seem placed as spies upon each other, and are furnished
5 with different abilities, adapted for mutual inspection.

CHAPTER IX.

TWO LADIES OF GREAT DISTINCTION INTRODUCED. SUPERIOR FINERY EVER SEEMS TO CONFER SUPERIOR BREEDING.

MR. BURCHELL had scarce taken leave and Sophia consented to dance with the chaplain, when my little ones came running out to tell us that the Squire was come with a crowd of company. Upon our return, we found our landlord, with a couple of under gentlemen and two 5 young ladies richly dressed, whom he introduced as women of very great distinction and fashion from town. We happened not to have chairs enough for the whole company, but Mr. Thornhill immediately proposed that every gentleman should sit in a lady's lap. This I posi- 10 tively objected to, notwithstanding a look of disapprobation from my wife. Moses was therefore despatched to borrow a couple of chairs; and as we were in want of ladies to make up a set at country-dances, the two gentlemen went with him in quest of a couple of partners. 15 Chairs and partners were soon provided. The gentlemen returned with my neighbour Flamborough's rosy daughters, flaunting with red topknots. But an unlucky circumstance was not adverted to; though the Miss Flamboroughs were reckoned the very best of dancers in the 20

parish, and understood the jig and roundabout to perfection, yet they were totally unacquainted with country-dances. This at first discomposed us ; however, after a little shoving and dragging, they at last went merrily on.

5 Our music consisted of two fiddles, with a pipe and tabor. The moon shone bright ; Mr. Thornhill and my eldest daughter led up the ball, to the great delight of the spectators ; for the neighbours, hearing what was going forward, came flocking about us. My girl moved with so

10 much grace and vivacity that my wife could not avoid discovering the pride of her heart by assuring me that, though the little chit did it so cleverly, all the steps were stolen from herself. The ladies of the town strove hard to be equally easy, but without success. They swam,

15 sprawled, languished, and frisked, but all would not do ; the gazers, indeed, owned that it was fine ; but neighbour Flamborough observed that Miss Livy's feet seemed as pat to the music as its echo. After the dance had continued about an hour, the two ladies, who were apprehensive of

20 catching cold, moved to break up the ball. One of them, I thought, expressed her sentiments upon this occasion in a very coarse manner, when she observed that, by the *living jingo*, *she was all of a muck of sweat*. Upon our return to the house, we found a very elegant cold supper,

25 which Mr. Thornhill had ordered to be brought with him. The conversation at this time was more reserved than before. The two ladies threw my girls quite into the shade, for they would talk of nothing but high-life and high-lived company, with other fashionable topics, such as pictures,

30 taste, Shakespeare, and the musical glasses. 'Tis true, they once or twice mortified us sensibly by slipping out

an oath ; but that appeared to me as the surest symptom of their distinction (though I am since informed that swearing is perfectly unfashionable). Their finery, however, threw a veil over any grossness in their conversation. My daughters seemed to regard their superior accomplishments with envy, and what appeared amiss was ascribed to tip-top quality breeding. But the condescension of the ladies was still superior to their accomplishments. One of them observed that had Miss Olivia seen a little more of the world, it would greatly improve ¹⁰ her ; to which the other added that a single winter in town would make little Sophia quite another thing. My wife warmly assented to both, adding that there was nothing she more ardently wished than to give her girls a single winter's polishing. To this I could not help reply- ¹⁵ ing that their breeding was already superior to their fortune, and that greater refinement would only serve to make their poverty ridiculous, and give them a taste for pleasures they had no right to possess. — "And what pleasures," cried Mr. Thornhill, "do they not deserve to ²⁰ possess, who have so much in their power to bestow ? As for my part," continued he, "my fortune is pretty large ; love, liberty, and pleasure are my maxims ; but curse me if a settlement of half my estate could give my charming Olivia pleasure, it should be hers ; and the only ²⁵ favour I would ask in return would be to add myself to the benefit." I was not such a stranger to the world as to be ignorant that this was the fashionable cant to disguise the insolence of the basest proposal, but I made an effort to suppress my resentment. "Sir," cried I, "the ³⁰ family which you now condescend to favour with your

company has been bred with as nice a sense of honour as you ; any attempts to injure that may be attended with very dangerous consequences. Honour, sir, is our only possession at present, and of that treasure we must be particularly careful." I was soon sorry for the warmth with which I had spoken this when the young gentleman, grasping my hand, swore he commended my spirit, though he disapproved my suspicions. "As to your present hint," continued he, "I protest nothing was farther from my heart than such a thought. No, by all that's tempting, the virtue that will stand a regular siege was never to my taste ; for all my amours are carried by a coup de main."

The two ladies, who affected to be ignorant of the rest, seemed highly displeased with this last stroke of freedom, and began a very discreet and serious dialogue upon virtue. In this, my wife, the chaplain, and I, soon joined ; and the Squire himself was at last brought to confess a sense of sorrow for his former excesses. We talked of the pleasures of temperance, and of the sunshine in the mind unpolluted with guilt. I was so well pleased that my little ones were kept up beyond the usual time to be edified by so much good conversation. Mr. Thornhill even went beyond me, and demanded if I had any objection to giving prayers. I joyfully embraced the proposal, and in this manner the night was passed in the most comfortable way, till at last the company began to think of returning. The ladies seemed very unwilling to part with my daughters, for whom they had conceived a particular affection, and joined in a request to have the pleasure of their company at home. The Squire seconded the proposal, and my

wife added her entreaties ; the girls, too, looked upon me as if they wished to go. In this perplexity I made two or three excuses, which my daughters as readily removed ; so that at last I was obliged to give a peremptory refusal, for which we had nothing but sullen looks and short an- 5
swers the whole day ensuing.

CHAPTER X.

THE FAMILY ENDEAVOUR TO COPE WITH THEIR BETTERS.

THE MISERIES OF THE POOR WHEN THEY ATTEMPT TO
APPEAR ABOVE THEIR CIRCUMSTANCES.

I NOW began to find that all my long and painful lectures upon temperance, simplicity, and contentment were entirely disregarded. The distinctions lately paid us by our betters awakened that pride which I had laid asleep, 5 but not removed. Our windows again, as formerly, were filled with washes for the neck and face. The sun was dreaded as an enemy to the skin without-doors, and the fire as a spoiler of the complexion within. My wife observed that rising too early would hurt her daughters' eyes ; 10 that working after dinner would redden their noses ; and she convinced me that the hands never looked so white as when they did nothing. Instead, therefore, of finishing George's shirts, we now had them new-modelling their old gauzes, or flourishing upon catgut. The poor Miss Flam- 15 boroughs, their former gay companions, were cast off as mean acquaintance, and the whole conversation ran upon high-life, and high-lived company, with pictures, taste, Shakespeare, and the musical glasses.

But we could have borne all this, had not a fortune- 20 telling gipsy come to raise us into perfect sublimity. The

tawny sibyl no sooner appeared, than my girls came running to me for a shilling apiece to cross her hand with silver. To say the truth, I was tired of being always wise, and could not help gratifying their request, because I loved to see them happy. I gave each of them a shilling ; 5 though for the honour of the family it must be observed, that they never went without money themselves, as my wife always generously let them have a guinea each, to keep in their pockets ; but with strict injunctions never to change it. After they had been closeted up with the 10 fortune-teller for some time, I knew by their looks, upon their returning, that they had been promised something great. " Well, my girls, how have you sped ? Tell me, Livy, has the fortune-teller given thee a penny-worth ? " — " I protest, papa," says the girl, " I believe she deals with 15 somebody that's not right ; for she positively declared, that I am to be married to a Squire in less than a twelve-month ! " — " Well, now, Sophy, my child," said I, " and what sort of a husband are you to have ? " — " Sir," replied she, " I am to have a Lord soon after my sister has 20 married the Squire." — " How," cried I, " is that all you are to have for your two shillings ! Only a Lord and a Squire for two shillings ! You fools, I could have promised you a Prince and a Nabob for half the money."

This curiosity of theirs, however, was attended with 25 very serious effects. We now began to think ourselves designed by the stars to something exalted, and already anticipated our future grandeur.

It has been a thousand times observed, and I must observe it once more, that the hours we pass with happy 30 prospects in view are more pleasing than those crowned

with fruition. In the first case, we cook the dish to our own appetite ; in the latter, nature cooks it for us. It is impossible to repeat the train of agreeable reveries we called up for our entertainment. We looked upon our
5 fortunes as once more rising ; and, as the whole parish asserted that the Squire was in love with my daughter, she was actually so with him, for they persuaded her into the passion. In this agreeable interval my wife had the most lucky dreams in the world, which she took care to tell us
10 every morning, with great solemnity and exactness. It was one night a coffin and cross-bones, the sign of an approaching wedding : at another time she imagined her daughters' pockets filled with farthings, a certain sign they would shortly be stuffed with gold. The girls themselves had
15 their omens. They felt strange kisses on their lips ; they saw rings in the candle, purses bounced from the fire, and true-love knots lurked in the bottom of every teacup.

Towards the end of the week we received a card from the town ladies, in which, with their compliments, they
20 hoped to see all our family at church the Sunday following. All Saturday morning I could perceive, in consequence of this, my wife and daughters in close conference together, and now and then glancing at me with looks that betrayed a latent plot. To be sincere, I had strong suspi-
25 cions that some absurd proposal was preparing for appearing with splendour the next day. In the evening they began their operations in a very regular manner, and my wife undertook to conduct the siege. After tea, when I seemed in spirits, she began thus : — “ I fancy, Charles,
30 my dear, we shall have a great deal of good company at our church to-morrow.” — “ Perhaps we may, my dear,”

returned I ; “though you need be under no uneasiness about that ; you shall have a sermon, whether there be or not.” — “That is what I expect,” returned she ; “but I think, my dear, we ought to appear there as decently as possible, for who knows what may happen?” — “Your 5 precautions,” replied I, “are highly commendable. A decent behaviour and appearance in church is what charms me. We should be devout and humble, cheerful and serene.” — “Yes,” cried she, “I know that ; but I mean we should go there in as proper a manner as possible ; 10 not altogether like the scrubs about us.” — “You are quite right, my dear,” returned I, “and I was going to make the very same proposal. The proper manner of going is, to go there as early as possible, to have time for meditation before the service begins.” — “Phoo, Charles,” 15 interrupted she, “all that is very true, but not what I would be at. I mean, we should go there genteelly. You know the church is two miles off, and I protest I don’t like to see my daughters trudging up to their pew all blowzed and red with walking, and looking for all the 20 world as if they had been winners at a smock race. Now, my dear, my proposal is this : there are our two plough-horses, the colt that has been in our family these nine years, and his companion Blackberry, that has scarce done an earthly thing for this month past. They are 25 both grown fat and lazy. Why should not they do something as well as we ? And let me tell you, when Moses has trimmed them a little, they will cut a very tolerable figure.”

To this proposal I objected that walking would be 30 twenty times more genteel than such a paltry convey-

ance, as Blackberry was wall-eyed, and the colt wanted a tail ; that they had never been broken to the rein, but had an hundred vicious tricks ; and that we had but one saddle and pillion in the whole house. All these objections, however, were overruled, so that I was obliged to comply. The next morning I perceived them not a little busy in collecting such materials as might be necessary for the expedition ; but, as I found it would be a business of time, I walked on to the church before, and they
10 promised speedily to follow. I waited near an hour in the reading desk for their arrival ; but not finding them come as expected, I was obliged to begin, and went through the service, not without some uneasiness at finding them absent. This was increased when all was
15 finished, and no appearance of the family. I therefore walked back by the horseway, which was five miles round, though the footway was but two ; and, when got about half-way home, perceived the procession marching slowly forward towards the church ; my son, my
20 wife, and the two little ones exalted on one horse, and my two daughters upon the other. I demanded the cause of their delay, but I soon found, by their looks, they had met with a thousand misfortunes on the road. The horses had, at first, refused to move from the door,
25 till Mr. Burchell was kind enough to beat them forward for about two hundred yards with his cudgel. Next, the straps of my wife's pillion broke down, and they were obliged to stop to repair them before they could proceed. After that, one of the horses took it into his
30 head to stand still, and neither blows nor entreaties could prevail with him to proceed. He was just recover-



"Took it into his head
to stand still"

C. E. Brock
1897

ing from this dismal situation when I found them ; but, perceiving everything safe, I own their present mortification did not much displease me, as it would give me many opportunities of future triumph, and teach my daughters more humility.

CHAPTER XI.

THE FAMILY STILL RESOLVE TO HOLD UP THEIR HEADS.

MICHAELMAS—EVE happening on the next day, we were invited to burn nuts and play tricks at neighbour Flamborough's. Our late mortifications had humbled us a little, or it is probable we might have rejected such an invitation with contempt; however, we suffered ourselves to be happy. Our honest neighbour's goose and dumplings were fine, and the lamb's-wool, even in the opinion of my wife, who was a connoisseur, was excellent. It is true, his manner of telling stories was not quite so well.
10 They were very long, and very dull, and all about himself, and we had laughed at them ten times before; however, we were kind enough to laugh at them once more.

Mr. Burchell, who was of the party, was always fond of seeing some innocent amusement going forward, and set
15 the boys and girls to blindman's buff. My wife, too, was persuaded to join in the diversion, and it gave me pleasure to think she was not yet too old. In the meantime, my neighbour and I looked on, laughed at every feat, and praised our own dexterity when we were young.
20 Hot cockles succeeded next, questions and commands



Lady Blarney and
Miss Carolina Wildmina Amelia Steggs!"

followed that, and last of all, they sat down to hunt the slipper. As every person may not be acquainted with this primeval pastime, it may be necessary to observe that the company, at this play, plant themselves in a ring upon the ground, all except one, who stands in the 5 middle, whose business it is to catch a shoe, which the company shove about under their hams from one to another, something like a weaver's shuttle. As it is impossible, in this case, for the lady who is up to face all the company at once, the great beauty of the play lies in 10 hitting her a thump with the heel of the shoe on that side least capable of making a defence. It was in this manner that my eldest daughter was hemmed in, and thumped about, all blowzed, in spirits, and bawling for fair play, fair play, with a voice that might deafen a 15 ballad-singer, when, confusion on confusion, who should enter the room but our two great acquaintances from town, Lady Blarney and Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs! Description would but beggar, therefore it is unnecessary to describe; this new mortification. Death! 20 To be seen by ladies of such high-breeding in such vulgar attitudes! Nothing better could ensue from such a vulgar play of Mr. Flamborough's proposing. We seemed stuck to the ground for some time, as if actually petrified with amazement. 25

The two ladies had been at our house to see us, and, finding us from home, came after us hither, as they were uneasy to know what accident could have kept us from church the day before. Olivia undertook to be our prolocutor, and delivered the whole in a summary way, only 30 saying, "We were thrown from our horses." At which

account the ladies were greatly concerned ; but being told the family received no hurt, they were extremely glad ; but being informed that we were almost killed by the fright, they were vastly sorry ; but hearing that we
5 had a very good night, they were extremely glad again. Nothing could exceed their complaisance to my daughters ; their professions last evening were warm, but now they were ardent. They protested a desire of having a more lasting acquaintance. Lady Blarney was
10 particularly attached to Olivia ; Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs (I love to give the whole name) took a greater fancy to her sister. They supported the conversation between themselves, while my daughters sat silent, admiring their exalted breeding. But as every reader,
15 however beggarly himself, is fond of high-lived dialogues, with anecdotes of lords, ladies, and Knights of the Garter, I must beg leave to give him the concluding part of the present conversation.

“All that I know of the matter,” cried Miss Skeggs,
20 “is this, that it may be true, or it may not be true ; but this I can assure your ladyship, that the whole rout was in amaze : his lordship turned all manner of colours, my lady fell into a swoon, but Sir Tomkyn, drawing his sword, swore he was hers to the last drop of his blood.”

25 “Well,” replied our peeress, “this I can say, that the duchess never told me a syllable of the matter, and I believe her grace would keep nothing a secret from me. This you may depend on as fact, that, the next morning, my lord duke cried out three times to his valet-de-
30 chambre, ‘Jernigan, Jernigan, Jernigan, bring me my garters.’”

But previously I should have mentioned the very impolite behaviour of Mr. Burchell, who, during this discourse, sat with his face turned to the fire, and at the conclusion of every sentence would cry out *fudge*, an expression which displeased us all, and in some measure 5 damped the rising spirit of the conversation.

"Besides, my dear Skeggs," continued our peeress, "there is nothing of this in the copy of verses that Doctor Burdock made upon the occasion." — *Fudge!*

"I am surprised at that," cried Miss Skeggs; "for he 10 seldom leaves anything out, as he writes only for his own amusement. But can your ladyship favour me with a sight of them?" — *Fudge!*

"My dear creature," replied our peeress, "do you think I carry such things about me? Though they are 15 very fine, to be sure, and I think myself something of a judge; at least I know what pleases myself. Indeed, I was ever an admirer of all Doctor Burdock's little pieces; for except what he does, and our dear countess at Hanover Square, there's nothing comes out but the 20 most lowest stuff in nature; not a bit of high-life among them." — *Fudge!*

"Your ladyship should except," says t'other, "your own things in the *Lady's Magazine*. I hope you'll say there's nothing low-lived there? But I suppose we are 25 to have no more from that quarter?" — *Fudge!*

"Why, my dear," says the lady, "you know my reader and companion has left me, to be married to Captain Roach; and as my poor eyes won't suffer me to write myself, I have been for some time looking out for 30 another. A proper person is no easy matter to find;

and, to be sure, thirty pounds a year is a small stipend for a well-bred girl of character, that can read, write, and behave in company; as for the chits about town, there is no bearing them about one." — *Fudge!*

5 "That I know," cried Miss Skeggs, "by experience. For of the three companions I had this last half-year, one of them refused to do plain work an hour in the day, another thought twenty-five guineas a year too small a salary, and I was obliged to send away the third, be-
10 cause I suspected an intrigue with the chaplain. Virtue, my dear Lady Blarney, virtue is worth any price; but where is that to be found?" — *Fudge!*

My wife had been for a long time all attention to this discourse; but was particularly struck with the latter part
15 of it. Thirty pounds and twenty-five guineas a year made fifty-six pounds five shillings English money, all which was in a manner going a-begging, and might easily be secured in the family. She for a moment studied my looks for approbation; and, to own a truth, I was of
20 opinion that two such places would fit our two daughters exactly. Besides, if the Squire had any real affection for my eldest daughter, this would be the way to make her every way qualified for her fortune. My wife, therefore, was resolved that we should not be deprived
25 of such advantages for want of assurance, and undertook to harangue for the family. "I hope," cried she, "your ladyships will pardon my present presumption. It is true, we have no right to pretend to such favours; but yet it is natural for me to wish putting my children for-
30 ward in the world. And I will be bold to say my two girls have had a pretty good education and capacity; at

least the country can't show better. They can read, write, and cast accompts ; they understand their needle, broad stitch, cross and change, and all manner of plain work ; they can pink, point, and frill, and know something of music ; they can do up small clothes, work upon 5 catgut ; my eldest can cut paper, and my youngest has a very pretty manner of telling fortunes upon the cards."

Fudge !

When she had delivered this pretty piece of eloquence, the two ladies looked at each other a few minutes in 10 silence, with an air of doubt and importance. At last Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs condescended to observe that the young ladies, from the opinion she could form of them from so slight an acquaintance, seemed very fit for such employments ; "But a thing 15 of this kind, madam," cried she, addressing my spouse, "requires a thorough examination into characters, and a more perfect knowledge of each other. Not, madam," continued she, "that I in the least suspect the young ladies' virtue, prudence, and discretion ; but there is a 20 form in these things, madam, there is a form."

My wife approved her suspicions very much, observing that she was very apt to be suspicious herself ; but referred her to all the neighbours for a character ; but this our peeress declined as unnecessary, alleging that 25 her cousin Thornhill's recommendation would be sufficient, and upon this we rested our petition.

CHAPTER XII.

FORTUNE SEEMS RESOLVED TO HUMBLE THE FAMILY OF WAKEFIELD. MORTIFICATIONS ARE OFTEN MORE PAINFUL THAN REAL CALAMITIES.

WHEN we were returned home, the night was dedicated to schemes of future conquest. Deborah exerted much sagacity in conjecturing which of the two girls was likely to have the best place, and most opportunities of seeing good company. The only obstacle to our preferment was in obtaining the Squire's recommendation ; but he had already shown us too many instances of his friendship to doubt of it now. Even in bed my wife kept up the usual theme : " Well, faith, my dear Charles, between ourselves, I think we have made an excellent day's work of it." — " Pretty well," cried I, not knowing what to say. — " What, only pretty well !" returned she. " I think it is very well. Suppose the girls should come to make acquaintances of taste in town ! This I am assured of, that London is the only place in the world for all manner of husbands. Besides, my dear, stranger things happen every day ; and as ladies of quality are so taken with my daughters, what will not men of quality be ! *Entre nous*, I protest I like my Lady Blarney vastly, so very obliging. However, Miss Carolina Wil-

helmina Amelia Skeggs has my warm heart. But yet, when they came to talk of places in town, you saw at once how I nailed them. Tell me, my dear, don't you think I did for my children there?"—"Ay," returned I, not knowing well what to think of the matter, 5 "Heaven grant they may be both the better for it this day three months!" This was one of those observations I usually made to impress my wife with an opinion of my sagacity; for if the girls succeeded, then it was a pious wish fulfilled; but if anything unfortunate ensued, then 10 it might be looked upon as a prophecy. All this conversation, however, was only preparatory to another scheme; and, indeed, I dreaded as much. This was nothing less than, that as we were now to hold up our heads a little higher in the world, it would be proper to sell the colt, 15 which was grown old, at a neighbouring fair, and buy us a horse that would carry a single or double upon an occasion, and make a pretty appearance at church or upon a visit. This at first I opposed stoutly; but it was stoutly defended. However, as I weakened, my antago- 20 nists gained strength, till at last it was resolved to part with him.

As the fair happened on the following day, I had intentions of going myself; but my wife persuaded me that I had got a cold, and nothing could prevail upon her to 25 permit me from home. "No, my dear," said she, "our son Moses is a discreet boy, and can buy and sell to a very good advantage; you know all our great bargains are of his purchasing. He always stands out and higgles, and actually tires them till he gets a bargain." 30

As I had some opinion of my son's prudence, I was

willing enough to intrust him with this commission ; and the next morning I perceived his sisters mighty busy in fitting out Moses for the fair—trimming his hair, brushing his buckles, and cocking his hat with pins. The business
5 of the toilet being over, we had at last the satisfaction of seeing him mounted upon the colt, with a deal box before him to bring home groceries in. He had on a coat made of that cloth they call thunder and lightning, which, though grown too short, was much too good to be
10 thrown away. His waistcoat was of a gosling green, and his sisters had tied his hair with a broad black riband. We all followed him several paces from the door bawling after him, good luck, good luck, till we could see him no longer.

15 He was scarce gone when Mr. Thornhill's butler came to congratulate us upon our good-fortune, saying that he overheard his young master mention our names with great commendation.

Good-fortune seemed resolved not to come alone.
20 Another footman from the same family followed, with a card for my daughters, importing that the two ladies had received such pleasing accounts from Mr. Thornhill of us all that, after a few previous inquiries, they hoped to be perfectly satisfied. "Ay," cried my wife, "I now see it
25 is no easy matter to get into the families of the great ; but, when one once gets in, then, as Moses says, one may go sleep." To this piece of humour, for she intended it for wit, my daughters assented with a loud laugh of pleasure. In short, such was her satisfaction at this mes-
30 sage that she actually put her hand in her pocket and gave the messenger sevenpence-halfpenny.

This was to be our visiting-day. The next that came was Mr. Burchell, who had been at the fair. He brought my little ones a pennyworth of gingerbread each, which my wife undertook to keep for them, and give them by letters at a time. He brought my daughters also a couple 5 of boxes, in which they might keep wafers, snuff, patches, or even money, when they got it. My wife was usually fond of a weasel-skin purse, as being the most lucky ; but this by-the-bye. We had still a regard for Mr. Burchell, though his late rude behaviour was in some measure dis- 10 pleasing ; nor could we now avoid communicating our happiness to him and asking his advice : although we seldom followed advice, we were all ready enough to ask it. When he read the note from the two ladies, he shook his head, and observed that an affair of this sort de- 15 manded the utmost circumspection.—This air of diffidence highly displeased my wife. “ I never doubted, sir,” cried she, “ your readiness to be against my daughters and me. You have more circumspection than is wanted. However, I fancy when we come to ask advice, 20 we will apply to persons who seem to have made use of it themselves.” — “ Whatever my own conduct may have been, madam,” replied he, “ is not the present question ; though as I have made no use of advice myself, I should in conscience give it to those that will.” — As I was appre- 25 hensive this answer might draw on a repartee, making up by abuse what it wanted in wit, I changed the subject, by seeming to wonder what could keep our son so long at the fair, as it was now almost nightfall. — “ Never mind our son,” cried my wife, “ depend upon it he knows 30 what he is about. I’ll warrant we’ll never see him sell

his hen of a rainy day. I have seen him buy such bargains as would amaze one. I'll tell you a good story about that, that will make you split your sides with laughing. But, as I live, yonder comes Moses, without an
5 horse, and the box at his back."

As she spoke, Moses came slowly on foot, and sweating under the deal box, which he had strapped round his shoulders like a peddler. — "Welcome, welcome, Moses ; well, my boy, what have you brought us from the fair?" —
10 "I have brought you myself," cried Moses, with a sly look, and resting the box on the dresser. "Ay, Moses," cried my wife, "that we know, but where is the horse?" — "I have sold him," cried Moses, "for three pounds five shillings and twopence." — "Well done, my good boy,"
15 returned she, "I knew you would touch them off. Between ourselves, three pounds five shillings and twopence is no bad day's work. Come, let us have it then." — "I have brought back no money," cried Moses again. "I have laid it all out in a bargain, and here it is," pulling
20 out a bundle from his breast — "here they are : a gross of green spectacles, with silver rims and shagreen cases." — "A gross of green spectacles !" repeated my wife in a faint voice. "And you have parted with the colt, and brought us back nothing but a gross of green
25 paltry spectacles?" — "Dear mother," cried the boy, "why won't you listen to reason? I had them a dead bargain, or I should not have bought them. The silver rims alone will sell for double the money." — "A fig for the silver rims !" cried my wife, in a passion ; "I dare
30 swear they won't sell for above half the money at the rate of broken silver, five shillings an ounce." — "You need



C.E. Brock
1897

"They talked him up
as finely as they did me"

be under no uneasiness," cried I, "about selling the rims ; for they are not worth sixpence, for I perceive they are only copper varnished over." — "What," cried my wife, "not silver, the rims not silver !" — "No," cried I, "no more silver than your sauce-pan." — "And so," returned 5 she, "we have parted with the colt, and have only got a gross of green spectacles, with copper rims and shagreen cases ! A murrain take such trumpery ! The blockhead has been imposed upon, and should have known his company better." — "There, my dear," cried I, "you are 10 wrong, he should not have known them at all." — "Marry, hang the idiot !" returned she, "to bring me such stuff. If I had them, I would throw them in the fire." — "There again you are wrong, my dear," cried I ; "for though they be copper, we will keep them by us, as 15 copper spectacles, you know, are better than nothing."

By this time the unfortunate Moses was undeceived. He now saw that he had been imposed upon by a prowling sharper, who, observing his figure, had marked him for an easy prey. I therefore asked the circumstances 20 of his deception. He sold the horse, it seems, and walked the fair in search of another. A reverend-looking man brought him to a tent, under pretence of having one to sell. "Here," continued Moses, "we met another man, very well dressed, who desired to borrow twenty 25 pounds upon these, saying that he wanted money, and would dispose of them for a third of the value. The first gentleman, who pretended to be my friend, whispered me to buy them, and cautioned me not to let so good an offer pass. I sent for Mr. Flamborough, and 30 they talked him up as finely as they did me, and so at last we were persuaded to buy the two gross between us."

CHAPTER XIII.

MR. BURCHELL IS FOUND TO BE AN ENEMY ; FOR HE HAS
THE CONFIDENCE TO GIVE DISAGREEABLE ADVICE.

OUR family had now made several attempts to be fine ; but some unforeseen disaster demolished each as soon as projected. I endeavoured to take the advantage of every disappointment, to improve their good sense in proportion as they were frustrated in ambition. “You see, my children,” cried I, “how little is to be got by attempts to impose upon the world, in coping with our betters. Such as are poor, and will associate with none but the rich, are hated by those they avoid, and despised by those they follow. Unequal combinations are always disadvantageous to the weaker side — the rich having the pleasure, and the poor the inconveniences, that result from them. But come, Dick, my boy, and repeat the fable you were reading to-day, for the good of the company.”

15 “Once upon a time,” cried the child, “a Giant and a Dwarf were friends, and kept together. They made a bargain that they would never forsake each other, but go seek adventures. The first battle they fought was with two Saracens ; and the Dwarf, who was very courageous,
20 dealt one of the champions a most angry blow. It did

the Saracen very little injury, who, lifting up his sword, fairly struck off the poor Dwarf's arm. He was now in a woful plight; but the Giant coming to his assistance, in a short time left the two Saracens dead on the plain; and the Dwarf cut off the dead man's head out of spite. 5 They then travelled on to another adventure. This was against three bloody-minded Satyrs, who were carrying away a damsel in distress. The Dwarf was not quite so fierce now as before; but, for all that, struck the first blow, which was returned by another, that knocked out 10 his eye; but the Giant was soon up with them, and, had they not fled, would certainly have killed them every one. They were all very joyful for this victory, and the damsel who was relieved fell in love with the Giant and married him. They now travelled far, and farther than I can tell, 15 till they met with a company of robbers. The Giant, for the first time, was foremost now; but the Dwarf was not far behind. The battle was stout and long. Wherever the Giant came, all fell before him; but the Dwarf had like to have been killed more than once. At last the 20 victory declared for the two adventurers; but the Dwarf lost his leg. The Dwarf was now without an arm, a leg, and an eye, while the Giant was without a single wound. Upon which he cried out to his little companion, My little hero, this is glorious sport; let us get one victory more, 25 and then we shall have honour for ever. No, cries the Dwarf who was by this time grown wiser, no, I declare off; I'll fight no more; for I find in every battle that you get all the honours and rewards, but all the blows fall upon me."

30

I was going to moralise this fable, when our attention

was called off to a warm dispute between my wife and Mr. Burchell, upon my daughters' intended expedition to town. My wife very strenuously insisted upon the advantages that would result from it. Mr. Burchell, on the
5 contrary, dissuaded her with great ardour, and I stood neuter. His present dissuasions seemed but the second part of those which were received with so ill a grace in the morning. The dispute grew high, while poor Deborah, instead of reasoning stronger, talked louder, and at
10 last was obliged to take shelter from a defeat in clamour. The conclusion of her harangue, however, was highly displeasing to us all: she knew, she said, of some who had their own secret reasons for what they advised; but, for her part, she wished such to stay away from her house for
15 the future. — "Madam," cried Burchell, with looks of great composure, which tended to inflame her the more, "as for secret reasons, you are right: I have secret reasons, which I forbear to mention, because you are not able to answer those of which I make no secret. But I find my
20 visits here are become troublesome; I'll take my leave therefore now, and perhaps come once more to take a final farewell when I am quitting the country." Thus saying, he took up his hat, nor could the attempts of Sophia, whose looks seemed to upbraid his precipitancy,
25 prevent his going.

When gone, we all regarded each other for some minutes with confusion. My wife, who knew herself to be the cause, strove to hide her concern with a forced smile and an air of assurance, which I was willing to reprove:
30 "How, woman," cried I to her, "is it thus we treat strangers? Is it thus we return their kindness? Be as-

sured, my dear, that these were the harshest words, and to me the most displeasing, that have escaped your lips !” — “Why would he provoke me then ?” replied she ; “but I know the motives of his advice perfectly well. He would prevent my girls from going to town, that he may 5 have the pleasure of my youngest daughter’s company here at home. But, whatever happens, she shall choose better company than such low-lived fellows as he.” — “Low-lived, my dear, do you call him ?” cried I ; “it is very possible we may mistake this man’s character, for he 10 seems upon some occasions the most finished gentleman I ever knew. — Tell me, Sophia, my girl, has he ever given you any secret instances of his attachment ?” — “His conversation with me, sir,” replied my daughter, “has ever been sensible, modest, and pleasing. As to aught else, 15 no, never. Once, indeed, I remember to have heard him say, he never knew a woman who could find merit in a man that seemed poor.” — “Such, my dear,” cried I, “is the common cant of all the unfortunate or idle. But I hope you have been taught to judge properly of such men, 20 and that it would be even madness to expect happiness from one who has been so very bad an economist of his own. Your mother and I have now better prospects for you. The next winter, which you will probably spend in town, will give you opportunities of making a more pru- 25 dent choice.”

What Sophia’s reflections were upon this occasion, I can’t pretend to determine ; but I was not displeased at the bottom, that we were rid of a guest from whom I had much to fear. Our breach of hospitality went to my 30 conscience a little ; but I quickly silenced that monitor

by two or three specious reasons, which served to satisfy and reconcile me to myself. The pain which conscience gives the man who has already done wrong, is soon got over. Conscience is a coward, and those faults it has
5 not strength enough to prevent, it seldom has justice enough to accuse.

CHAPTER XIV.

FRESH MORTIFICATIONS, OR A DEMONSTRATION THAT SEEM-
ING CALAMITIES MAY BE REAL BLESSINGS.

THE journey of my daughters to town was now resolved upon, Mr. Thornhill having kindly promised to inspect their conduct himself, and inform us by letter of their behaviour. But it was thought indispensably necessary that their appearance should equal the greatness of their 5 expectations, which could not be done without expense. We debated, therefore, in full council what were the easiest methods of raising money, or, more properly speaking, what we could most conveniently sell. The deliberation was soon finished : it was found that our remaining horse 10 was utterly useless for the plough without his companion, and equally unfit for the road, as wanting an eye ; it was therefore determined that we should dispose of him for the purpose above mentioned, at the neighbouring fair, and, to prevent imposition, that I should go with him 15 myself. Though this was one of the first mercantile transactions of my life, yet I had no doubt about acquitting myself with reputation. The opinion a man forms of his own prudence is measured by that of the company he keeps ; and as mine was mostly in the family way, I had 20

conceived no unfavourable sentiments of my worldly wisdom. My wife, however, next morning, at parting, after I had got some paces from the door, called me back, to advise me, in a whisper, to have all my eyes
5 about me.

I had, in the usual forms, when I came to the fair, put my horse through all his paces, but for some time had no bidders. At last a chapman approached, and, after he had for a good while examined the horse round, finding
10 him blind of one eye, he would have nothing to say to him ; a second came up, but observing he had a spavin, declared he would not take him for the driving home ; a third perceived he had a wind-gall, and would bid no money ; a fourth knew by his eye that he had the bots ;
15 a fifth wondered what a plague I could do at the fair with a blind, spavined, galled hack, that was only fit to be cut up for a dog-kennel. By this time I began to have a most hearty contempt for the poor animal myself, and was almost ashamed at the approach of every customer :
20 for though I did not entirely believe all the fellows told me, yet I reflected that the number of witnesses was a strong presumption they were right, and St. Gregory, upon good works, professes himself to be of the same opinion.

25 I was in this mortifying situation, when a brother clergyman, an old acquaintance, who had also business at the fair, came up, and, shaking me by the hand, proposed adjourning to a public-house, and taking a glass of whatever we could get. I readily closed with the offer, and
30 entering an alehouse, we were shown into a little back room, where there was only a venerable old man, who sat

wholly intent over a large book, which he was reading. I never in my life saw a figure that prepossessed me more favourably. His locks of silver gray venerably shaded his temples, and his green old-age seemed to be the result of health and benevolence. However, his 5 presence did not interrupt our conversation. My friend and I discoursed on the various turns of fortune we had met, the Whistonian controversy, my last pamphlet, the archdeacon's reply, and the hard measure that was dealt me. But our attention was in a short time taken off by 10 the appearance of a youth, who, entering the room, respectfully said something softly to the old stranger. "Make no apologies, my child," said the old man; "to do good is a duty we owe to all our fellow-creatures. Take this; I wish it were more; but five pounds will re- 15 lieve your distress, and you are welcome." The modest youth shed tears of gratitude, and yet his gratitude was scarce equal to mine. I could have hugged the good old man in my arms, his benevolence pleased me so. He continued to read, and we resumed our conversation, until 20 my companion, after some time, recollecting that he had business to transact in the fair, promised to be soon back, adding, that he always desired to have as much of Dr. Primrose's company as possible. The old gentleman, hearing my name mentioned, seemed to look at me with 25 attention for some time, and when my friend was gone, most respectfully demanded if I was in any way related to the great Primrose, that courageous monogamist, who had been the bulwark of the Church. Never did my heart feel sincerer rapture than at that moment. "Sir," cried 30 I, "the applause of so good a man, as I am sure you are,

adds to that happiness in my breast which your benevolence has already excited. You behold before you, sir, that Dr. Primrose, the monogamist, whom you have been pleased to call great. You here see that unfortunate
5 divine who has so long, and it would ill become me to say successfully, fought against the deuterogamy of the age." — "Sir," cried the stranger, struck with awe, "I fear I have been too familiar, but you'll forgive my curiosity, sir ; I beg pardon." — "Sir," cried I, grasping his
10 hand, "you are so far from displeasing me by your familiarity, that I must beg you'll accept my friendship, as you already have my esteem." — "Then with gratitude I accept the offer," cried he, squeezing me by the hand, "thou glorious pillar of unshaken orthodoxy ; and do I
15 behold" — I here interrupted what he was going to say, for though, as an author, I could digest no small share of flattery, yet now my modesty would permit no more. However, no lovers in romance ever cemented a more instantaneous friendship. We talked upon several
20 subjects : at first I thought he seemed rather devout than learned, and began to think he despised all human doctrines as dross. Yet this no way lessened him in my esteem, for I had for some time begun privately to harbour such an opinion myself. I therefore took occasion
25 to observe that the world in general began to be blamably indifferent as to doctrinal matters, and followed human speculations too much. "Ay, sir," replied he — as if he had reserved all his learning to that moment, "Ay, sir, the world is in its dotage, and yet the cosmogony or creation of the world has puzzled philosophers of all ages. What a medley of opinions have they

not broached upon the creation of the world ! Sancho-
niathon, Manetho, Berosus, and Ocellus Lucanus, have
all attempted it in vain. The latter has these words,
Anarchon ara kai atelutaion to pan, which imply that
all things have neither beginning nor end. Manetho also, 5
who lived about the time of Nebuchadon-Asser — Asser
being a Syriac word usually applied as a surname to the
kings of that country, as Teglat Phael-Asser, Nabon-
Asser — he, I say, formed a conjecture equally absurd;
for, as we usually say, *ek to biblion kubernetes*, which 10
implies that books will never teach the world ; so he
attempted to investigate — But, sir, I ask pardon ; I am
straying from the question.” — That he actually was, nor
could I for my life see how the creation of the world
had anything to do with the business I was talking of ; 15
but it was sufficient to show me that he was a man of
letters, and I now revered him the more. I was
resolved, therefore, to bring him to the touchstone ; but
he was too mild and too gentle to contend for victory.
Whenever I made any observation that looked like a chal- 20
lenge to controversy, he would smile, shake his head, and
say nothing, by which I understood he could say much
if he thought proper. The subject, therefore, insensibly
changed from the business of antiquity to that which
brought us both to the fair : mine, I told him, was to 25
sell a horse, and, very luckily indeed, his was to buy one
for one of his tenants. My horse was soon produced,
and, in fine, we struck a bargain. Nothing now remained
but to pay me, and he accordingly pulled out a thirty-
pound note and bid me change it. Not being in a 30
capacity of complying with this demand, he ordered his

footman to be called up, who made his appearance in a very genteel livery. "Here, Abraham," cried he, "go and get gold for this; you'll do it at neighbour Jackson's, or anywhere." While the fellow was gone, he entertained me with a pathetic harangue on the great scarcity of silver, which I undertook to improve by deploring also the great scarcity of gold; so that by the time Abraham returned we had both agreed that money was never so hard to be come at as now. Abraham returned to inform us that he had been over the whole fair, and could not get change, though he had offered half a crown for doing it. This was a very great disappointment to us all; but the old gentleman, having paused a little, asked me if I knew one Solomon Flamborough, in my part of the country. Upon replying that he was my next-door neighbour, "If that be the case, then," returned he, "I believe we shall deal. You shall have a draft upon him, payable at sight, and let me tell you he is as warm a man as any within five miles round him. Honest Solomon and I have been acquainted for many years together. I remember I always beat him at three jumps; but he could hop on one leg farther than I." A draft upon my neighbour was to me the same as money, for I was sufficiently convinced of his ability. The draft was signed, and put into my hands, and Mr. Jenkinson, the old gentleman, his man Abraham, and my horse, old Blackberry, trotted off, very well pleased with each other.

After a short interval being left to reflection, I began to recollect that I had done wrong in taking a draft from a stranger, and so prudently resolved upon following the

purchaser and having back my horse. But this was now too late ; I therefore made directly homewards, resolving to get the draft changed into money at my friend's as fast as possible. I found my honest neighbour smoking his pipe at his own door, and, informing him that I had a small bill upon him, he read it twice over. "You can read the name, I suppose," cried I, "Ephraim Jenkinson." — "Yes," returned he, "the name is written plain enough, and I know the gentleman too, the greatest rascal under the canopy of heaven. This is the very same rogue who sold us the spectacles. Was he not a venerable-looking man, with gray hair, and no flaps to his pocket-holes? And did he not talk a long string of learning about Greek, and cosmogony, and the world?" To this I replied with a groan. "Ay," continued he, "he has but that one piece of learning in the world, and he always talks it away whenever he finds a scholar in company ; but I know the rogue, and will catch him yet."

Though I was already sufficiently mortified, my greatest struggle was to come, in facing my wife and daughters. No truant was ever more afraid of returning to school, there to behold the master's visage, than I was of going home. I was determined, however, to anticipate their fury, by first falling into a passion myself.

But, alas ! upon entering, I found the family no way disposed for battle. My wife and girls were all in tears, Mr. Thornhill having been there that day to inform them that their journey to town was entirely over. The two ladies having heard reports of us from some malicious person about us, were that day set out for London. He could neither discover the tendency nor the author of

these ; but whatever they might be, or whoever might have broached them, he continued to assure our family of his friendship and protection. I found, therefore, that they bore my disappointment with great resignation, as it was eclipsed in the greatness of their own. But what perplexed us most was to think who could be so base as to asperse the character of a family so harmless as ours, too humble to excite envy, and too inoffensive to create disgust.

• CHAPTER XV.

ALL MR. BURCHELL'S VILLAINY AT ONCE DETECTED. THE
FOLLY OF BEING OVER-WISE. .

THAT evening and a part of the following day was employed in fruitless attempts to discover our enemies. Scarcely a family in the neighbourhood but incurred our suspicions, and each of us had reasons for our opinion best known to ourselves. As we were in this perplexity, 5 one of our little boys, who had been playing abroad, brought in a letter-case, which he found on the green. It was quickly known to belong to Mr. Burchell, with whom it had been seen, and, upon examination, contained some hints upon different subjects ; but what particularly 10 engaged our attention was a sealed note, superscribed, *The copy of a letter to be sent to the ladies at Thornhill Castle*. It instantly occurred that he was the base informer, and we deliberated whether the note should not be broke open. I was against it ; but Sophia, who said she was 15 sure that of all men he would be the last to be guilty of so much baseness, insisted upon its being read. In this she was seconded by the rest of the family, and, at their joint solicitation, I read as follows : —

“Ladies, — The bearer will sufficiently satisfy you as to 20

the person from whom this comes : one, at least, the friend of innocence, and ready to prevent its being seduced. I am informed for a truth that you have some intention of bringing two young ladies to town, whom I have some knowledge of, under the character of companions. As I would neither have simplicity imposed upon nor virtue contaminated, I must offer it as my opinion that the impropriety of such a step will be attended with dangerous consequences. It has never been my way to treat the infamous or the lewd with severity ; nor should I now have taken this method of explaining myself, or reproving folly, did it not aim at guilt. Take, therefore, the admonition of a friend, and seriously reflect on the consequences of introducing infamy and vice into retreats where peace and innocence have hitherto resided."

Our doubts were now at an end. There seemed, indeed, something applicable to both sides in this letter, and its censures might as well be referred to those to whom it was written as to us ; but the malicious meaning was obvious, and we went no farther. My wife had scarce patience to hear me to the end, but railed at the writer with unrestrained resentment. Olivia was equally severe, and Sophia seemed perfectly amazed at his baseness. As for my part, it appeared to me one of the vilest instances of unprovoked ingratitude I had ever met with. Nor could I account for it in any other manner than by imputing it to his desire of detaining my youngest daughter in the country, to have the more frequent opportunities of an interview. In this manner we all sat ruminating upon schemes of vengeance, when our other little boy came running in to tell us that Mr. Burchell was approaching at the other end

of the field. It is easier to conceive than describe the complicated sensations which are felt from the pain of a recent injury and the pleasure of approaching vengeance. Though our intentions were only to upbraid him with his ingratitude, yet it was resolved to do it in a manner that 5 would be perfectly cutting. For this purpose we agreed to meet him with our usual smiles ; to chat, in the beginning, with more than ordinary kindness ; to amuse him a little ; and then, in the midst of the flattering calm, to burst upon him like an earthquake, and overwhelm him 10 with the sense of his own baseness. This being resolved upon, my wife undertook to manage the business herself, as she really had some talents for such an undertaking. We saw him approach ; he entered, drew a chair, and sat down. “ A fine day, Mr. Burchell.” — “ A very fine day, 15 Doctor ; though I fancy we shall have some rain by the shooting of my corns.” — “ The shooting of your horns,” cried my wife, in a loud fit of laughter, and then asked pardon for being fond of a joke. — “ Dear madam,” replied he, “ I pardon you with all my heart ; for I protest I 20 should not have thought it a joke had you not told me.” — “ Perhaps not, sir,” cried my wife, winking at us, “ and yet I dare say you can tell us how many jokes go to an ounce.” — “ I fancy, madam,” returned Burchell, “ you have been reading a jest-book this morning, that ounce 25 of jokes is so very good a conceit ; and yet, madam, I had rather see half an ounce of understanding.” — “ I believe you might,” cried my wife, still smiling at us, though the laugh was against her ; “ and yet I have seen some men pretend to understanding that have very little.” — “ And 30 no doubt,” returned her antagonist, “ you have known

ladies set up for wit that had none." — I quickly began to find that my wife was likely to gain but little at this business ; so I resolved to treat him in a style of more severity myself. "Both wit and understanding," cried I, "are 5 trifles, without integrity ; it is that which gives value to every character. The ignorant peasant without fault is greater than the philosopher with many ; for what is genius or courage without an heart ?

" 'An honest man's the noblest work of God.' "

"I always held that hackneyed maxim of Pope," re-
10 turned Mr. Burchell, "as very unworthy of a man of genius, and a base desertion of his own superiority. As the reputation of books is raised not by their freedom from defect, but the greatness of their beauties ; so should that of men be prized not for their exemption from fault, but
15 the size of those virtues they are possessed of. The scholar may want prudence, the statesman may have pride, and the champion ferocity ; but shall we prefer to these the low mechanic who laboriously plods on through life without censure or applause ? We might as well pre-
20 fer the tame correct paintings of the Flemish school to the erroneous but sublime animations of the Roman pencil."

"Sir," replied I, "your present observation is just, when there are shining virtues and minute defects ; but when it appears that great vices are opposed in the same
25 mind to as extraordinary virtues, such a character deserves contempt."

"Perhaps," cried he, "there may be some such monsters as you describe, of great vices joined to great virtues ;

yet in my progress through life I never yet found one instance of their existence : on the contrary, I have ever perceived that where the mind was capacious, the affections were good. And, indeed, Providence seems kindly our friend in this particular, thus to debilitate the understanding where the heart is corrupt, and diminish the power where there is the will to do mischief. This rule seems to extend even to other animals : the little vermin race are ever treacherous, cruel, and cowardly, whilst those endowed with strength and power are generous, brave, and gentle.”

“These observations sound well,” returned I, “and yet it would be easy this moment to point out a man,” and I fixed my eye steadfastly upon him, “whose head and heart form a most detestable contrast. Ay, sir,” continued I, raising my voice, “and I am glad to have this opportunity of detecting him in the midst of his fancied security. Do you know this, sir, this pocket-book?” — “Yes, sir,” returned he, with a face of impenetrable assurance, “that pocket-book is mine, and I am glad you have found it.” — “And do you know,” cried I, “this letter? Nay, never falter, man ; but look me full in the face : I say, do you know this letter?” — “That letter,” returned he ; “yes, it was I that wrote that letter.” — “And how could you,” said I, “so basely, so ungratefully presume to write this letter?” — “And how came you,” replied he, with looks of unparalleled effrontery, “so basely to presume to break open this letter? Don’t you know, now, I could hang you all for this? All that I have to do is to swear at the next justice’s that you have been guilty of breaking open the lock of my pocket-book, and so hang you all up

at his door." This piece of unexpected insolence raised me to such a pitch that I could scarce govern my passion. "Ungrateful wretch, begone ! and no longer pollute my dwelling with thy baseness ! Begone ! and never let me
5 see thee again ! Go from my door ; and the only punishment I wish thee is an alarmed conscience, which will be a sufficient tormentor !" So saying, I threw him his pocket-book, which he took up with a smile, and, shutting the clasps with the utmost composure, left us quite
10 astonished at the serenity of his assurance. My wife was particularly enraged that nothing could make him angry, or make him seem ashamed of his villanies. "My dear," cried I, willing to calm those passions that had been raised too high among us, "we are not to be surprised
15 that bad men want shame ; they only blush at being detected in doing good, but glory in their vices.

"Guilt and Shame, says the allegory, were at first companions, and in the beginning of their journey inseparably kept together. But their union was soon found to be
20 disagreeable and inconvenient to both ; Guilt gave Shame frequent uneasiness, and Shame often betrayed the secret conspiracies of Guilt. After long disagreement, therefore, they at length consented to part forever. Guilt boldly walked forward alone, to overtake Fate, that went
25 before in the shape of an executioner ; but Shame, being naturally timorous, returned back to keep company with Virtue, which, in the beginning of their journey, they had left behind. Thus, my children, after men have travelled through a few stages of vice, Shame forsakes them, and
30 returns back to wait upon the few virtues they have still remaining."

CHAPTER XVI.

THE FAMILY USE ART, WHICH IS OPPOSED WITH STILL
GREATER.

WHATEVER might have been Sophia's sensations, the rest of the family was easily consoled for Mr. Burchell's absence by the company of our landlord, whose visits now became more frequent and longer. Though he had been disappointed in procuring my daughters the amusements of the town as he designed, he took every opportunity of supplying them with those little recreations which our retirement would admit of. He usually came in the morning, and while my son and I followed our occupations abroad, he sat with the family at home, and amused them by describing the town, with every part of which he was particularly acquainted. He could repeat all the observations that were retailed in the atmosphere of the play-houses, and had all the good things of the high wits by rote long before they made their way into the jest-books. The intervals between conversation were employed in teaching my daughters piquet, or sometimes in setting my two little ones to box to make them *sharp*, as he called it; but the hopes of having him for a son-in-law in some measure blinded us to all his imperfections.

must be owned that my wife laid a thousand schemes to entrap him ; or, to 'speak more tenderly, used every art to magnify the merit of her daughter.' If the cakes at tea eat short and crisp, they were made by Olivia ; if the
5 gooseberry wine was well knit, the gooseberries were of her gathering : it was her fingers which gave the pickles their peculiar green ; and in the composition of a pudding, it was her judgment that mixed the ingredients. Then the poor woman would sometimes tell the Squire, that she
10 thought him and Olivia extremely of a size, and would bid both stand up to see which was tallest. These instances of cunning, which she thought impenetrable, yet which everybody saw through, were very pleasing to our benefactor, who gave every day some new proofs of his
15 passion, which, though they had not arisen to proposals of marriage, yet, we thought, fell but little short of it ; and his slowness was attributed sometimes to native bashfulness, and sometimes to his fear of offending his uncle. An occurrence, however, which happened soon after put
20 it beyond a doubt that he designed to become one of our family ; my wife even regarded it as an absolute promise.

My wife and daughters happening to return a visit to neighbour Flamborough's, found that family had lately
25 got their pictures drawn by a limner who travelled the country and took likenesses for fifteen shillings a head. As this family and ours had long a sort of rivalry in point of taste, our spirit took the alarm at this stolen march upon us, and, notwithstanding all I could say (and I said
30 much), it was resolved that we should have our pictures done too. Having, therefore, engaged the limner (for



C. F. Brock
1892

"Would bid both stand up
-to see which was tallest"

what could I do), our next deliberation was to show the superiority of our taste in the attitudes. As for our neighbour's family, there were seven of them, and they were drawn with seven oranges,—a thing quite out of taste, no variety in life, no composition in the world. We desired 5 to have something in a brighter style, and, after many debates, at length came to an unanimous resolution of being drawn together in one large historical family piece. This would be cheaper, since one frame would serve for all, and it would be infinitely more genteel, for all families of 10 any taste were now drawn in the same manner. As we did not immediately recollect an historical subject to hit us, we were contented each with being drawn as independent historical figures. My wife desired to be represented as Venus, and the painter was desired not to be too frugal of 15 his diamonds in her stomacher and hair. Her two little ones were to be as Cupids by her side, while I, in my gown and band, was to present her with my books on the Whistonian controversy. Olivia would be drawn as an Amazon, sitting upon a bank of flowers, dressed in a green 20 joseph, richly laced with gold, and a whip in her hand. Sophia was to be a shepherdess, with as many sheep as the painter could put in for nothing; and Moses was to be dressed out with a hat and white feather. Our taste so much pleased the Squire that he insisted on being put 25 in as one of the family, in the character of Alexander the Great, at Olivia's feet. This was considered by us all as an indication of his desire to be introduced into the family; nor could we refuse his request. The painter was therefore set to work, and as he wrought with assiduity and 30 expedition, in less than four days the whole was completed.

The piece was large, and, it must be owned he did not spare his colours, for which my wife gave him great encomiums. We were all perfectly satisfied with his performance ; but an unfortunate circumstance had not occurred till the picture was finished, which now struck us with dismay. It was so very large that we had no place in the house to fix it. How we all came to disregard so material a point is inconceivable ; but, certain it is, we had been all greatly remiss. The picture, therefore, instead
10 of gratifying our vanity, as we hoped, leaned, in a most mortifying manner, against the kitchen wall, where the canvas was stretched and painted, much too large to be got through any of the doors, and the jest of all our neighbours. One compared it to Robinson Crusoe's long-
15 boat, too large to be removed ; another thought it more resembled a reel in a bottle ; some wondered how it could be got out, but still more were amazed how it ever got in.

But though it excited the ridicule of some, it effectually
20 raised more malicious suggestions in many. The Squire's portrait being found united with ours was an honour too great to escape envy. Scandalous whispers began to circulate at our expense, and our tranquillity was continually disturbed by persons who came, as friends, to tell us what
25 was said of us by enemies. These reports we always resented with becoming spirit ; but scandal ever improves by opposition.

We once again, therefore, entered into a consultation upon obviating the malice of our enemies, and at last came
30 to a resolution which had too much cunning to give me entire satisfaction. It was this : as our principal object

was to discover the honour of Mr. Thornhill's addresses, my wife undertook to sound him by pretending to ask his advice in the choice of a husband for her eldest daughter. If this was not found sufficient to induce him to a declaration, it was then resolved to terrify him with a 5 rival. To this last step, however, I would by no means give my consent, till Olivia gave me the most solemn assurances that she would marry the person provided to rival him upon this occasion, if he did not prevent it by taking her himself. Such was the scheme laid, which, though I 10 did not strenuously oppose, I did not entirely approve.

The next time, therefore, that Mr. Thornhill came to see us, my girls took care to be out of the way, in order to give their mamma an opportunity of putting her scheme in execution ; but they only retired to the next room, from 15 whence they could overhear the whole conversation. My wife artfully introduced it by observing that one of the Miss Flamboroughs was like to have a very good match of it in Mr. Spanker. To this the Squire assenting, she proceeded to remark that they who had warm fortunes 20 were always sure of getting good husbands : " But, Heaven help," continued she, " the girls that have none. What signifies beauty, Mr. Thornhill ? or what signifies all the virtue and all the qualifications in the world, in this age of self-interest ? It is not, what is she ? but, what has 25 she ? is all the cry."

" Madam," returned he, " I highly approve the justice, as well as the novelty, of your remarks ; and if I were a king, it should be otherwise. It should then, indeed, be fine times with the girls without fortunes : our two young 30 ladies should be the first for whom I would provide."

“Ah, sir,” returned my wife, “you are pleased to be facetious : but I wish I were a queen, and then I know where my eldest daughter should look for a husband. But, now that you have put it into my head, seriously, 5 Mr. Thornhill, can’t you recommend me a proper husband for her? She is now nineteen years old, well grown and well educated, and, in my humble opinion, does not want for parts.”

“Madam,” replied he, “if I were to choose, I would 10 find out a person possessed of every accomplishment that can make an angel happy. One with prudence, fortune, taste, and sincerity ; such, madam, would be, in my opinion, the proper husband.” — “Ay, sir,” said she, “but do you know of any such person?” — “No, madam,” returned he, “it is impossible to know any person that 15 deserves to be her husband. She’s too great a treasure for one man’s possession ; she’s a goddess. Upon my soul, I speak what I think ! she’s an angel.” — “Ah, Mr. Thornhill, you only flatter my poor girl : but we have 20 been thinking of marrying her to one of your tenants, whose mother is lately dead, and who wants a manager. You know whom I mean, — farmer Williams ; a warm man, Mr. Thornhill, able to give her good bread ; and who has several times made her proposals” (which was actually 25 the case) ; “but, sir,” concluded she, “I should be glad to have your approbation of our choice.” — “How, madam,” replied he, “my approbation ! My approbation of such a choice ! Never. What ! sacrifice so much beauty and sense and goodness to a creature insensible of 30 the blessing ! Excuse me ; I can never approve of such a piece of injustice ! And I have my reasons.” — “Indeed,

sir," cried Deborah, "if you have your reasons, that's another affair ; but I should be glad to know those reasons." — "Excuse me, madam," returned he, "they lie too deep for discovery" — laying his hand upon his bosom — "they remain buried, riveted here." 5

After he was gone, upon a general consultation, we could not tell what to make of these fine sentiments. Olivia considered them as instances of the most exalted passion ; but I was not quite so sanguine. It seemed to me pretty plain that they had more of love than matrimony in them ; yet, whatever they might portend, it was resolved to prosecute the scheme of farmer Williams, who, from my daughter's first appearance in the country, had paid her his addresses.

CHAPTER XVII.

SCARCELY ANY VIRTUE FOUND TO RESIST THE POWER OF
LONG AND PLEASING TEMPTATION.

As I only studied my child's real happiness, the assiduity of Mr. Williams pleased me, as he was in easy circumstances, prudent, and sincere. It required but very little encouragement to revive his former passion; so
5 that in an evening or two he and Mr. Thornhill met at our house, and surveyed each other for some time with looks of anger; but Williams owed his landlord no rent, and little regarded his indignation. Olivia, on her side, acted the coquette to perfection, if that might be called
10 acting which was her real character, pretending to lavish all her tenderness on her new lover. Mr. Thornhill appeared quite dejected at this preference, and with a pensive air took leave, though I own it puzzled me to find him in so much pain as he appeared to be, when he
15 had it in his power so easily to remove the cause by declaring an honourable passion. But whatever uneasiness he seemed to endure, it could easily be perceived that Olivia's anguish was still greater. After any of these interviews between her lovers, of which there were several,
20 she usually retired to solitude, and there indulged her

grief. It was in such a situation I found her one evening, after she had been for some time supporting a fictitious gaiety. "You now see, my child," said I, "that your confidence in Mr. Thornhill's passion was all a dream : he permits the rivalry of another, every way his inferior, 5 though he knows it lies in his power to secure you to himself by a candid declaration." "Yes, papa," returned she, "but he has his reasons for this delay : I know he has. The sincerity of his looks and words convinces me of his real esteem. A short time, I hope, will discover 10 the generosity of his sentiments, and convince you that my opinion of him has been more just than yours." — "Olivia, my darling," returned I, "every scheme that has been hitherto pursued to compel him to a declaration has been proposed and planned by yourself ; nor can you 15 in the least say that I have constrained you. But you must not suppose, my dear, that I will ever be instrumental in suffering his honest rival to be the dupe of your ill-placed passion. Whatever time you require to bring your fancied admirer to an explanation shall be 20 granted ; but at the expiration of that term, if he is still regardless, I must absolutely insist that honest Mr. Williams shall be rewarded for his fidelity. The character which I have hitherto supported in life demands this from me, and my tenderness as a parent shall never 25 influence my integrity as a man. Name, then, your day ; let it be as distant as you think proper, and in the meantime take care to let Mr. Thornhill know the exact time on which I design delivering you up to another. If he really loves you, his own good sense will readily 30 suggest that there is but one method alone to prevent

his losing you for ever." — This proposal, which she could not avoid considering as perfectly just, was readily agreed to. She again renewed her most positive promise of marrying Mr. Williams, in case of the other's insensibility ; 5 and at the next opportunity, in Mr Thornhill's presence, that day month was fixed upon for her nuptials with his rival.

Such vigorous proceedings seemed to redouble Mr. Thornhill's anxiety ; but what Olivia really felt gave me 10 some uneasiness. In this struggle between prudence and passion, her vivacity quite forsook her, and every opportunity of solitude was sought and spent in tears. One week passed away ; but Mr. Thornhill made no efforts to restrain her nuptials. The succeeding week he was still 15 assiduous ; but not more open. On the third he discontinued his visits entirely, and instead of my daughter testifying any impatience, as I expected, she seemed to retain a pensive tranquillity, which I looked upon as resignation. For my own part, I was now sincerely 20 pleased with thinking that my child was going to be secured in a continuance of competence and peace, and frequently applauded her resolution in preferring happiness to ostentation.

It was within about four days of her intended nuptials 25 that my little family at night were gathered round a charming fire, telling stories of the past, and laying schemes for the future. Busied in forming a thousand projects, and laughing at whatever folly came uppermost, " Well, Moses," cried I, " we shall soon, my boy, have a 30 wedding in the family ; what is your opinion of matters and things in general ? " — " My opinion, father, is, that

all things go on very well ; and I was just now thinking that when sister Livy is married to farmer Williams, we shall then have the loan of his cider-press and brewing-tubs for nothing." — "That we shall, Moses," cried I, "and he will sing us 'Death and the Lady,' to raise our 5 spirits into the bargain." — "He has taught that song to our Dick," cried Moses, "and I think he goes through it very prettily." — "Does he so?" cried I ; "then let us have it. Where's little Dick? let him up with it boldly." — "My brother Dick," cried Bill, my youngest, "is just 10 gone out with sister Livy : but Mr. Williams has taught me two songs, and I'll sing them for you, papa. Which song do you choose, the 'Dying Swan' or the 'Elegy on the Death of a Mad Dog'?" — "The Elegy, child, by all means," said I ; "I never heard that yet. And, Deborah, 15 my life, grief, you know, is dry ; let us have a bottle of the best gooseberry wine, to keep up our spirits. I have wept so much at all sorts of elegies of late that without an enlivening glass I am sure this will overcome me ; and Sophy, love, take your guitar, and thrum in with the boy 20 a little."

AN ELEGY ON THE DEATH OF A MAD DOG.

GOOD people all, of every sort,
 Give ear unto my song ;
 And if you find it wond'rous short,
 It cannot hold you long.

25

In Islington there was a man
 Of whom the world might say
 That still a godly race he ran
 Whene'er he went to pray.

A kind and gentle heart he had,
To comfort friends and foes;
The naked every day he clad
When he put on his clothes.

5 And in that town a dog was found,
As many dogs there be,
Both mongrel, puppy, whelp, and hound,
And curs of low degree.

10 This dog and man at first were friends;
But when a pique began,
The dog, to gain some private ends,
Went mad, and bit the man.

15 Around from all the neighbouring streets
The wondering neighbours ran,
And swore the dog had lost his wits,
To bite so good a man.

20 The wound it seem'd both sore and sad
To every Christian eye;
And while they swore the dog was mad,
They swore the man would die.

But soon a wonder came to light,
That showed the rogues they lied :
The man recover'd of the bite,
The dog it was that died.

25 "A very good boy, Bill, upon my word, and an elegy
that may truly be called tragical. Come, my children,
here's Bill's health, and may he one day be a bishop."

"With all my heart," cried my wife ; "and if he but
preaches as well as he sings, I make no doubt of him.

The most of his family, by the mother's side, could sing a good song : it was a common saying in our country, that the family of the Blenkinsops could never look straight before them, nor the Hugginsons blow out a candle ; that there were none of the Grogams but could sing a song, 5 or of the Marjorams but could tell a story." — " However that be," cried I, " the most vulgar ballad of them all generally pleases me better than the fine modern odes, and things that petrify us in a single stanza, — productions that we at once detest and praise. Put the glass 10 to your brother, Moses. The great fault of these elegiasts is, that they are in despair for griefs that give the sensible part of mankind very little pain. A lady loses her muff, her fan, or her lap-dog, and so the silly poet runs home to versify the disaster."

15

" That may be the mode," cried Moses, " in sublimer compositions ; but the Ranelagh songs that come down to us are perfectly familiar, and all cast in the same mould : Colin meets Dolly, and they hold a dialogue together ; he gives her a fairing to put in her hair, and she presents 20 him with a nosegay ; and then they go together to church, where they give good advice to young nymphs and swains to get married as fast as they can."

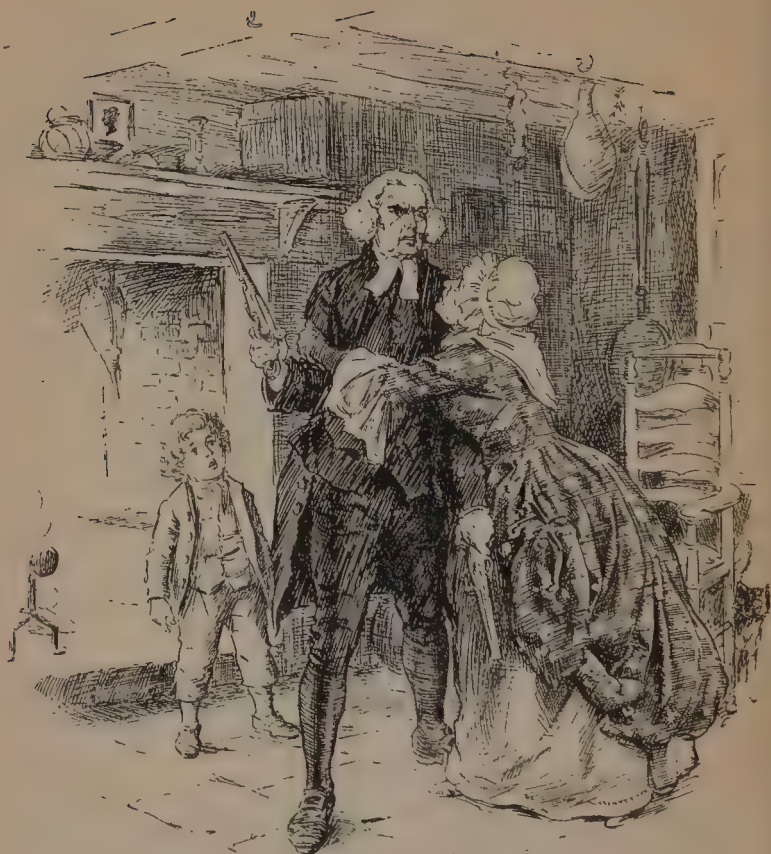
" And very good advice too," cried I ; " and I am told there is not a place in the world where advice can be 25 given with so much propriety as there ; for, as it persuades us to marry, it also furnishes us with a wife ; and surely that must be an excellent market, my boy, where we are told what we want, and supplied with it when wanting."

" Yes, sir," returned Moses, " and I know but of two 30 such markets for wives in Europe — Ranelagh in Eng-

land, and Fontarabia in Spain. The Spanish market is open once a year, but our English wives are salable every night."

"You are right, my boy," cried his mother, "Old
5 England is the only place in the world for husbands to get wives." — "And for wives to manage their husbands," interrupted I. "It is a proverb abroad that if a bridge were built across the sea, all the ladies of the Continent would come over to take pattern from ours; for there are
10 no such wives in Europe as our own. But let us have one bottle more, Deborah, my life, and, Moses, give us a good song. What thanks do we not owe to Heaven for thus bestowing tranquillity, health, and competence! I think myself happier now than the greatest monarch
15 upon earth. He has no such fireside, nor such pleasant faces about it. Yes, Deborah, we are now growing old; but the evening of our life is likely to be happy. We are descended from ancestors that knew no stain, and we shall leave a good and virtuous race of children behind us.
20 While we live, they will be our support and our pleasure here; and when we die, they will transmit our honour untainted to posterity. Come, my son, we wait for a song: let us have a chorus. But where is my darling Olivia? That little cherub's voice is always sweetest in
25 the concert."

Just as I spoke, Dick came running in. — "O papa, papa, she is gone from us! she is gone from us! my sister Livy is gone from us for ever!" — "Gone, child?" — "Yes, she is gone off with two gentlemen in a post-chaise, and one of them kissed her, and said he would
30 die for her; and she cried very much, and was for coming



"The poor wife
caught me in her arms—"

back ; but he persuaded her again, and she went into the chaise, and said, ‘ Oh, what will my poor papa do when he knows I am undone ! ’ ” — “ Now, then,” cried I, “ my children, go and be miserable, for we shall never enjoy one hour more. And, oh, may Heaven’s everlasting fury 5 light upon him and his ! Thus to rob me of my child ! And sure it will, for taking back my sweet innocent, that I was leading up to heaven. Such sincerity as my child was possessed of ! But all our earthly happiness is now over ! Go, my children, go, and be miserable and infa- 10 mous ; for my heart is broken within me ! ” — “ Father,” cried my son, “ is this your fortitude ? ” — “ Fortitude, child ! Yes, he shall see I have fortitude ! Bring me my pistols. I’ll pursue the traitor. While he is on earth, I’ll pursue him. Old as I am, he shall find I can sting 15 him yet. The villain ! the perfidious villain ! ”

I had by this time reached down my pistols, when my poor wife, whose passions were not so strong as mine, caught me in her arms. “ My dearest, dearest husband,” cried she, “ the Bible is the only weapon that is fit for your 20 old hands now. Open that, my love, and read our anguish into patience, for she has vilely deceived us. ” — “ Indeed, sir,” resumed my son, after a pause, “ your rage is too violent and unbecoming. You should be my mother’s comforter, and you increase her pain. It ill suited you 25 and your reverend character thus to curse your greatest enemy : you should not have cursed him, villain as he is. ” — “ I did not curse him, child, did I ? ” — “ Indeed, sir, you did ; you cursed him twice. ” — “ Then, may Heaven forgive me and him, if I did. And now, my 30 son, I see it was more than human benevolence that first

taught us to bless our enemies ! Blessed be his holy name for all the good he hath given, and for all that he hath taken away. But it is not, it is not a small distress that can wring tears from these old eyes, that have
5 not wept for so many years. My child ! To undo my darling ! — May confusion seize — Heaven forgive me ; what am I about to say ? You may remember, my love, how good she was, and how charming ; till this vile moment all her care was to make us happy. Had she but
10 died ! But she is gone, the honour of our family contaminated, and *I* must look out for happiness in other worlds than here. But, my child, you saw them go off : perhaps he forced her away ? If he forced her, she may yet be innocent.” — “ Ah, no, sir ! ” cried the child ; “ he
15 only kissed her, and called her his angel ; and she wept very much, and leaned upon his arm ; and they drove off very fast.” — “ She’s an ungrateful creature,” cried my wife, who could scarce speak for weeping, “ to use us thus. She never had the least constraint put upon her affections.
20 The vile strumpet has basely deserted her parents without any provocation, thus to bring your gray hairs to the grave, and I must shortly follow.”

In this manner that night, the first of our real misfortunes, was spent in the bitterness of complaint and ill-
25 supported sallies of enthusiasm. I determined, however, to find out our betrayer, wherever he was, and reproach his baseness. The next morning we missed our wretched child at breakfast, where she used to give life and cheerfulness to us all. My wife, as before, attempted
30 to ease her heart by reproaches. “ Never,” cried she, “ shall that vilest stain of our family again darken these

harmless doors. I will never call her daughter more. No, let the strumpet live with her vile seducer : she may bring us to shame, but she shall never more deceive us."

"Wife," said I, "do not talk thus hardly : my detestation of her guilt is as great as yours, but ever shall this 5 house and this heart be open to a poor returning repentant sinner. The sooner she returns from her transgression, the more welcome shall she be to me. For the first time the very best may err ; art may persuade, and novelty spread out its charm. The first fault is the 10 child of simplicity, but every other the offspring of guilt. Yes, the wretched creature shall be welcome to this heart and this house, though stained with ten thousand vices. I will again hearken to the music of her voice, again will I hang fondly on her bosom, if I find but repentance 15 there. My son, bring hither my Bible and my staff. I will pursue her, wherever she is ; and, though I cannot save her from shame, I may prevent the continuance of iniquity."

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE PURSUIT OF A FATHER TO RECLAIM A LOST CHILD TO VIRTUE.

THOUGH the child could not describe the gentleman's person who handed his sister into the post-chaise, yet my suspicions fell entirely upon our young landlord, whose character for such intrigues was but too well known. I
5 therefore directed my steps towards Thornhill Castle, resolving to upbraid him, and, if possible, to bring back my daughter : but before I had reached his seat, I was met by one of my parishioners, who said he saw a young lady resembling my daughter in a post-chaise with a gentle-
10 man, whom, by the description, I could only guess to be Mr. Burchell, and that they drove very fast. This information, however, did by no means satisfy me. I therefore went to the young Squire's, and, though it was yet early, insisted upon seeing him immediately : he soon appeared
15 with the most open, familiar air, and seemed perfectly amazed at my daughter's elopement, protesting upon his honour that he was quite a stranger to it. I now, therefore, condemned my former suspicions, and could turn them only on Mr. Burchell, who, I recollected, had of late
20 several private conferences with her ; but the appearance of another witness left me no room to doubt his villainy,

who averred that he and my daughter were actually gone towards the Wells, about thirty miles off, where there was a great deal of company.

Being driven to that state of mind in which we are more ready to act precipitately than to reason right, I never debated with myself whether these accounts might not have been given by persons purposely placed in my way, to mislead me, but resolved to pursue my daughter and her fancied deluder thither. I walked along with earnestness, and inquired of several by the way ; but received no accounts, till, entering the town, I was met by a person on horseback, whom I remembered to have seen at the Squire's, and he assured me that if I followed them to the races, which were but thirty miles farther, I might depend upon overtaking them ; for he had seen them dance there the night before, and the whole assembly seemed charmed with my daughter's performance. Early the next day, I walked forward to the races, and about four in the afternoon, I came upon the course. The company made a very brilliant appearance, all earnestly employed in one pursuit, that of pleasure ; how different from mine, that of reclaiming a lost child to virtue ! I thought I perceived Mr. Burchell at some distance from me ; but, as if he dreaded an interview, upon my approaching him, he mixed among the crowd, and I saw him no more. I now reflected that it would be to no purpose to continue my pursuit farther, and resolved to return home to an innocent family, who wanted my assistance. But the agitations of my mind, and the fatigues I had undergone, threw me into a fever, the symptoms of which I perceived before I came

off the course. This was another unexpected stroke, as I was more than seventy miles distant from home ; however, I retired to a little alehouse by the roadside, and in this place, the usual retreat of indigence and frugality, I laid me down patiently, to wait the issue of my disorder. I languished here for near three weeks ; but, at last, my constitution prevailed, though I was unprovided with money to defray the expenses of my entertainment. It is possible the anxiety from this last circumstance alone might have brought on a relapse, had I not been supplied by a traveller, who stopped to take a cursory refreshment. This person was no other than the philanthropic bookseller in St. Paul's Churchyard who has written so many little books for children : he called himself their friend ; but he was the friend of all mankind. He was no sooner alighted but he was in haste to be gone ; for he was ever on business of the utmost importance, and was at that time actually compiling materials for the history of one Mr. Thomas Trip. I immediately recollected this good-natured man's red pimpled face ; for he had published for me against the deuterogamists of the age, and from him I borrowed a few pieces, to be paid at my return. Leaving the inn, therefore, as I was yet but weak, I resolved to return home by easy journeys of ten miles a day. My health and usual tranquillity were almost restored, and I now condemned that pride which had made me refractory to the hand of correction. Man little knows what calamities are beyond his patience to bear till he tries them ; as in ascending the heights of ambition, which look bright from below, every step we rise shows us some new and gloomy prospect of hidden

disappointment ; so in our descent from the summits of pleasure, though the vale of misery below may appear, at first, dark and gloomy, yet the busy mind, still attentive to its own amusement, finds, as we descend, something to flatter and to please. Still as we approach, the darkest 5 objects appear to brighten, and the mental eye becomes adapted to its gloomy situation.

I now proceeded forward, and had walked about two hours, when I perceived what appeared at a distance like a wagon, which I was resolved to overtake ; but 10 when I came up with it, found it to be a strolling company's cart, that was carrying their scenes and other theatrical furniture to the next village, where they were to exhibit. The cart was attended only by the person who drove it, and one of the company, as the rest of the 15 players were to follow the ensuing day. Good company upon the road, says the proverb, is the shortest cut ; I therefore entered into conversation with the poor player ; and, as I once had some theatrical powers myself, I disserted on such topics with my usual freedom. 20 But as I was pretty much unacquainted with the present state of the stage, I demanded who were the present theatrical writers in vogue ; who the Drydens and Otways of the day — “ I fancy, sir,” cried the player, “ few of our modern dramatists would think themselves 25 much honoured by being compared to the writers you mention. Dryden's and Rowe's manner, sir, are quite out of fashion ; our taste has gone back a whole century : Fletcher, Ben Jonson, and all the plays of Shakespeare are the only things that go down.” — “ How,” cried I, 30 “ is it possible the present age can be pleased with that

antiquated dialect, that obsolete humour, those over-charged characters, which abound in the works you mention?" — "Sir," returned my companion, "the public think nothing about dialect or humour or character, for that is none of their business; they only go to be amused, and find themselves happy when they can enjoy a pantomime under the sanction of Jonson's or Shakespeare's name." — "So, then, I suppose," cried I, "that our modern dramatists are rather imitators of
10 Shakespeare than of nature." — "To say the truth," returned my companion, "I don't know that they imitate anything at all; nor, indeed, does the public require it of them: it is not the composition of the piece, but the number of starts and attitudes that may be introduced
15 into it, that elicits applause. I have known a piece, with not one jest in the whole, shrugged into popularity, and another saved by the poet's throwing in a fit of the gripes. No, sir, the works of Congreve and Farquhar have too much wit in them for the present taste; our
20 modern dialect is much more natural."

By this time the equipage of the strolling company was arrived at the village, which, it seems, had been apprised of our approach, and was come out to gaze at us; for my companion observed that strollers always
25 have more spectators without doors than within. I did not consider the impropriety of my being in such company till I saw a mob gather about me. I therefore took shelter, as fast as possible, in the first alehouse that offered, and, being shown into the common room, was
30 accosted by a very well-dressed gentleman, who demanded whether I was the real chaplain of the company,

or whether it was only to be my masquerade character in the play. Upon informing him of the truth, and that I did not belong in any sort to the company, he was condescending enough to desire me and the player to partake in a bowl of punch, over which he discussed 5 modern politics with great earnestness and interest. I set him down in my own mind for nothing less than a Parliament-man at least; but was almost confirmed in my conjectures, when, upon asking what there was in the house for supper, he insisted that the player and I should 10 sup with him at his house, with which request, after some entreaties, we were prevailed on to comply.

CHAPTER XIX.

THE DESCRIPTION OF A PERSON DISCONTENTED WITH THE
PRESENT GOVERNMENT, AND APPREHENSIVE OF THE LOSS
OF OUR LIBERTIES.

THE house where we were to be entertained lying at a small distance from the village, our inviter observed that, as the coach was not ready, he would conduct us on foot, and we soon arrived at one of the most magnificent mansions I had seen in that part of the country. The apartment into which we were shown was perfectly elegant and modern: he went to give orders for supper, while the player, with a wink, observed that we were perfectly in luck. Our entertainer soon returned, an
10 elegant supper was brought in, two or three ladies in easy dishabille were introduced, and the conversation began with some sprightliness. Politics, however, were the subject on which our entertainer chiefly expatiated; for he asserted that liberty was at once his boast and
15 his terror. After the cloth was removed, he asked me if I had seen the last *Monitor*, to which replying in the negative, "What, nor the *Auditor*, I suppose?" cried he. — "Neither, sir," returned I. — "That's strange, very strange," replied my entertainer. "Now, I read
20 all the politics that come out. The *Daily*, the *Public*, the

Ledger, the *Chronicle*, the *London Evening*, the *Whitehall Evening*, the seventeen magazines, and the two reviews; and, though they hate each other, I love them all. Liberty, sir, liberty is the Briton's boast; and, by all my coal-mines in Cornwall, I reverence its guar- 5
dians." — "Then it is to be hoped," cried I, "you reverence the king." — "Yes," returned my entertainer, "when he does what we would have him; but if he goes on as he has done of late, I'll never trouble myself more with his matters. I say nothing. I think only. I could 10
have directed some things better. I don't think there has been a sufficient number of advisers: he should advise with every person willing to give him advice, and then we should have things done in another guess manner." 15

"I wish," cried I, "that such intruding advisers were fixed in the pillory. It should be the duty of honest men to assist the weaker side of our constitution, that sacred power that has for some years been every day declining, and losing its due share of influence in the State. But 20
these ignorants still continue the same cry of liberty; and if they have any weight, basely throw it into the subsid-
ing scale."

"How!" cried one of the ladies; "do I live to see one so base, so sordid, as to be an enemy to liberty, and a 25
defender of tyrants? Liberty, that sacred gift of Heaven, that glorious privilege of Britons!"

"Can it be possible," cried our entertainer, "that there should be any found at present advocates for slavery? Any who are for meanly giving up the privileges of 30
Britons? Can any, sir, be so abject?"

“No, sir,” replied I, “I am for liberty, that attribute of gods ! Glorious liberty ! that theme of modern declamation. I would have all men kings. I would be a king myself. We have all naturally an equal right to the throne :
5 we are all originally equal. This is my opinion, and was once the opinion of a set of honest men who were called Levellers. They tried to erect themselves into a community where all should be equally free. But, alas ! it would never answer ; for there were some among them stronger,
10 and some more cunning, than others, and these became masters of the rest ; for as sure as your groom rides your horses because he is a cunninger animal than they, so surely will the animal that is cunninger or stronger than he sit upon his shoulders in turn. Since, then, it is en-
15 tailed upon humanity to submit, and some are born to command and others to obey, the question is, as there must be tyrants, whether it is better to have them in the same house with us, or in the same village, or, still farther off, in the metropolis. Now, sir, for my own part, as I
20 naturally hate the face of a tyrant, the farther off he is removed from me the better pleased am I. The generality of mankind also are of my way of thinking, and have unanimously created one king, whose election at once diminishes the number of tyrants and puts tyranny at
25 the greatest distance from the greatest number of people. Now, the great, who were tyrants themselves before the election of one tyrant, are naturally averse to a power raised over them, and whose weight must ever lean heaviest on the subordinate orders. It is the interest of the
30 great, therefore, to diminish kingly power as much as possible, because whatever they take from that is natu-

rally restored to themselves ; and all they have to do in the State is to undermine the single tyrant, by which they resume their primeval authority. Now, the State may be so circumstanced, or its laws may be so disposed, or its men of opulence so minded, as all to conspire in carrying on 5 this business of undermining monarchy. For, in the first place, if the circumstances of our State be such as to favour the accumulation of wealth, and make the opulent still more rich, this will increase their ambition. An accumulation of wealth, however, must necessarily be the 10 consequence, when, as at present, more riches flow in from external commerce than arise from internal industry ; for external commerce can only be managed to advantage by the rich, and they have also, at the same time, all the emoluments arising from internal industry ; so that the 15 rich, with us, have two sources of wealth, whereas the poor have but one. For this reason, wealth, in all commercial States, is found to accumulate ; and all such have hitherto in time become aristocratical.

“ Again, the very laws, also, of this country may con- 20 tribute to the accumulation of wealth ; as when by their means the natural ties that bind the rich and poor together are broken, and it is ordained that the rich shall only marry with the rich ; or when the learned are held unqualified to serve their country as counsellors merely 25 from a defect of opulence, and wealth is thus made the object of a wise man’s ambition ; by these means, I say, and such means as these, riches will accumulate. Now, the possessor of accumulated wealth, when furnished with the necessaries and pleasures of life, has no 30 other method to employ the superfluity of his fortune but

in purchasing power. That is, differently speaking, in making dependents, by purchasing the liberty of the needy or the venal, of men who are willing to bear the mortification of contiguous tyranny for bread. Thus each
5 very opulent man generally gathers round him a circle of the poorest of the people ; and the polity abounding in accumulated wealth may be compared to a Cartesian system, each orb with a vortex of its own. Those, however, who are willing to move in a great man's vortex are only
10 such as must be slaves, the rabble of mankind, whose souls and whose education are adapted to servitude, and who know nothing of liberty except the name.

“ But there must still be a large number of the people without the sphere of the opulent man's influence —
15 namely, that order of men which subsists between the very rich and the very rabble ; those men who are possessed of too large fortunes to submit to the neighbouring man in power, and yet are too poor to set up for tyranny themselves. In this middle order of mankind are generally to
20 be found all the arts, wisdom, and virtues of society. This order alone is known to be the true preserver of freedom, and may be called the People. Now, it may happen that this middle order of mankind may lose all its influence in a State, and its voice be in a manner drowned in that of
25 the rabble ; for if the fortune sufficient for qualifying a person at present to give his voice in State affairs be ten times less than was judged sufficient upon forming the constitution, it is evident that great numbers of the rabble will thus be introduced into the political system, and they, ever
30 moving in the vortex of the great, will follow where greatness shall direct. In such a State, therefore, all that the

middle order has left is to preserve the prerogative and privileges of the one principal governor with the most sacred circumspection ; for he divides the power of the rich, and calls off the great from falling with tenfold weight on the middle order placed beneath them. The middle order 5 may be compared to a town of which the opulent are forming the siege, and of which the governor from without is hastening the relief. While the besiegers are in dread of an enemy over them, it is but natural to offer the townsmen the most specious terms ; to flatter them with sounds, 10 and amuse them with privileges ; but if they once defeat the governor from behind, the walls of the town will be but a small defence to its inhabitants. What they may then expect may be seen by turning our eyes to Holland, Genoa, or Venice, where the laws govern the poor, and 15 the rich govern the law. I am then for, and would die for monarchy, sacred monarchy ; for if there be anything sacred amongst men, it must be the anointed Sovereign of his people, and every diminution of his power in war or in peace is an infringement upon the real liberties of 20 the subject. The sounds of liberty, patriotism, and Britons, have already done much ; it is to be hoped that the true sons of freedom will prevent their ever doing more. I have known many of those pretended champions for liberty in my time, yet do I not remember one that was 25 not in his heart and in his family a tyrant."

My warmth, I found, had lengthened this harangue beyond the rules of good breeding ; but the impatience of my entertainer, who often strove to interrupt it, could be restrained no longer. "What !" cried he, "then I have 30 been all this while entertaining a Jesuit in parson's

clothes ; but, by all the coal-mines of Cornwall, out he shall pack, if my name be Wilkinson !” I now found I had gone too far, and asked pardon for the warmth with which I had spoken. “ Pardon !” returned he, in a
5 fury ; “ I think such principles demand ten thousand pardons. What, give up liberty, property, and, as the *Gazetteer* says, lie down to be saddled with wooden shoes ! Sir, I insist upon your marching out of this house immediately to prevent worse consequences ; sir,
10 I insist upon it.” I was going to repeat my remonstrances ; but just then we heard a footman’s rap at the door, and the two ladies cried out, “ As sure as death, there is our master and mistress come home.” It seems my entertainer was all this while only the butler, who, in
15 his master’s absence, had a mind to cut a figure, and be for a while the gentleman himself ; and, to say the truth, he talked politics as well as most country gentlemen do. But nothing could now exceed my confusion upon seeing the gentleman and his lady enter ; nor was their surprise
20 at finding such company and good cheer less than ours. “ Gentlemen,” cried the real master of the house to me and my companion, “ my wife and I are your most humble servants ; but I protest this is so unexpected a favour that we almost sink under the obligation.” How-
25 ever unexpected our company might be to them, theirs, I am sure, was still more so to us ; and I was struck dumb with the apprehensions of my own absurdity, when whom should I next see enter the room but my dear Miss Arabella Wilmot, who was formerly designed to be married
30 to my son George, but whose match was broken off as already related. As soon as she saw me she flew to my

arms with the utmost joy. "My dear sir," cried she, "to what happy accident is it that we owe so unexpected a visit? I am sure my uncle and aunt will be in raptures when they find they have the good Dr. Primrose for their guest." Upon hearing my name, the old gentleman and lady very politely stepped up, and welcomed me with most cordial hospitality. Nor could they forbear smiling upon being informed of the nature of my present visit; but the unfortunate butler, whom they at first seemed disposed to turn away, was, at my intercession, forgiven.

Mr. Arnold and his lady, to whom the house belonged, now insisted upon having the pleasure of my stay for some days; and as their niece, my charming pupil, whose mind in some measure had been formed under my own instructions, joined in their entreaties, I complied. That night I was shown to a magnificent chamber, and the next morning early Miss Wilmot desired to walk with me in the garden, which was decorated in the modern manner. After some time spent in pointing out the beauties of the place, she inquired, with seeming unconcern, when last I had heard from my son George.—"Alas! madam," cried I, "he has now been near three years absent, without ever writing to his friends or me. Where he is I know not; perhaps I shall never see him or happiness more. No, my dear madam, we shall never more see such pleasing hours as were once spent by our fireside at Wakefield. My little family are now dispersing very fast, and poverty has brought not only want, but infamy, upon us." The good-natured girl let fall a tear at this account; but, as I saw her possessed of too much sensibility, I forbore a

more minute detail of our sufferings. It was, however, some consolation to me to find that time had made no alteration in her affections, and that she had rejected several matches that had been made her since our leaving
5 her part of the country. She led me round all the extensive improvements of the place, pointing to the several walks and arbours, and at the same time catching from every object a hint of some new question relative to my son.

10 In this manner we spent the forenoon, till the bell summoned us in to dinner, where we found the manager of the strolling company that I mentioned before, who was come to dispose of tickets for "The Fair Penitent," which was to be acted that evening, the part of Horatio
15 by a young gentleman who had never appeared on any stage. He seemed to be very warm in the praises of the new performer, and averred that he never saw any who bid so fair for excellence. "Acting," he observed, "was not learned in a day ; but this gentleman," continued he,
20 "seems born to tread the stage. His voice, his figure, and attitudes are all admirable. We caught him up accidentally in our journey down." This account, in some measure, excited our curiosity, and, at the entreaty of the ladies, I was prevailed upon to accompany them to the
25 playhouse, which was no other than a barn. As the company with which I went was incontestably the chief of the place, we were received with the greatest respect, and placed in the front seat of the theatre, where we sat for some time, with no small impatience, to see Horatio
30 make his appearance. The new performer advanced at last, and let parents think of my sensations by their own,

when I found it was my unfortunate son. He was going to begin, when, turning his eyes upon the audience, he perceived Miss Wilmot and me, and stood at once speechless and immovable. The actors behind the scene, who ascribed this pause to his natural timidity, attempted to encourage him ; but, instead of going on, he burst into a flood of tears, and retired off the stage. I don't know what were my feelings on this occasion, for they succeeded with too much rapidity for description ; but I was soon awaked from this disagreeable reverie by Miss Wilmot,¹⁰ who, pale and with a trembling voice, desired me to conduct her back to her uncle's. When I got home, Mr. Arnold, who was as yet a stranger to our extraordinary behaviour, being informed that the new performer was my son, sent his coach and an invitation for him ; and, as¹⁵ he persisted in his refusal to appear again upon the stage, the players put another in his place, and we soon had him with us. Mr. Arnold gave him the kindest reception, and I received him with my usual transport ; for I could never counterfeit false resentment. Miss Wilmot's recep-²⁰ tion was mixed with seeming neglect, and yet I could perceive she acted a studied part. The tumult in her mind seemed not yet abated : she said twenty giddy things that looked like joy, and then laughed loud at her own want of meaning. At intervals she would take a²⁵ sly peep at the glass, as if happy in the consciousness of unresisted beauty, and often would ask questions without giving any manner of attention to the answers.

CHAPTER XX.

THE HISTORY OF A PHILOSOPHIC VAGABOND, PURSUING
NOVELTY, BUT LOSING CONTENT.

AFTER we had supped, Mrs. Arnold politely offered to send a couple of her footmen for my son's baggage, which he at first seemed to decline, but upon her pressing the request, he was obliged to inform her that a stick
5 and wallet were all the movable things upon this earth that he could boast of. "Why, ay, my son," cried I, "you left me but poor, and poor I find you are come back; and yet I make no doubt you have seen a great deal of the world." — "Yes, sir," replied my son, "but
10 travelling after Fortune is not the way to secure her; and, indeed, of late I have desisted from the pursuit." — "I fancy, sir," cried Mrs. Arnold, "that the account of your adventures would be amusing; the first part of them I have often heard from my niece, but could the
15 company prevail for the rest, it would be an additional obligation." — "Madam," replied my son, "I promise you the pleasure you have in hearing will not be half so great as my vanity in repeating them; and yet, in the whole narrative, I can scarce promise you one adventure,
20 as my account is rather of what I saw than what I did.

The first misfortune of my life, which, you all know, was great, but though it distressed, it could not sink me. No person ever had a better knack at hoping than I. The less kind I found Fortune at one time, the more I expected from her another ; and being now at the bottom of her wheel, every new revolution might lift, but could not depress me. I proceeded, therefore, towards London in a fine morning, no way uneasy about to-morrow, but cheerful as the birds that carolled by the road, and comforted myself with reflecting that London was the mart where abilities of every kind were sure of meeting distinction and reward.

“ Upon my arrival in town, sir, my first care was to deliver your letter of recommendation to our cousin, who was himself in little better circumstances than I. My first scheme you know, sir, was to be usher at an academy, and I asked his advice on the affair. Our cousin received the proposal with a true sardonic grin. Ay, cried he, this is indeed a very pretty career that has been chalked out for you. I have been an usher at a boarding-school myself, and may I die by an anodyne necklace, but I had rather be an under-turnkey in Newgate. I was up early and late : I was browbeat by the master, hated for my ugly face by the mistress, worried by the boys within, and never permitted to stir out to meet civility abroad. But are you sure you are fit for a school? Let me examine you a little. Have you been bred apprentice to the business? No. Then you won't do for a school. Can you dress the boys' hair? No. Then you won't do for a school. Have you had the smallpox? No. Then you won't do for a school. Can

you lie three in a bed? No. Then you will never do for a school. Have you got a good stomach? Yes. Then you will by no means do for a school. No, sir; if you are for a genteel easy profession, bind yourself seven
5 years as an apprentice to turn a cutler's wheel; but avoid a school by any means. Yet come, continued he, I see you are a lad of spirit and some learning: what do you think of commencing author, like me? You have read in books, no doubt, of men of genius starving at the
10 trade: at present I'll show you forty very dull fellows about town that live by it in opulence. All honest jog-trot men, who go on smoothly and dully, and write history and politics, and are praised: men, sir, who, had they been bred cobblers, would all their lives have only
15 mended shoes, but never made them.

“Finding that there was no great degree of gentility affixed to the character of an usher, I resolved to accept his proposal, and having the highest respect for literature, hailed the *antiqua mater* of Grub Street with reverence.
20 I thought it my glory to pursue a track which Dryden and Otway trod before me. I considered the goddess of this region as the parent of excellence; and however an intercourse with the world might give us good sense, the poverty she granted I supposed to be the nurse of genius.
25 Big with these reflections, I sat down, and, finding that the best things remained to be said on the wrong side, I resolved to write a book that should be wholly new. I therefore dressed up some paradoxes with ingenuity. They were false, indeed, but they were new. The jewels
30 of truth have been so often imported by others, that nothing was left for me to import but some splendid

things that, at a distance, looked every bit as well. Witness, you powers, what fancied importance sat perched upon my quill while I was writing ! The whole learned world, I made no doubt, would rise to oppose my systems ; but then I was prepared to oppose the whole 5 learned world. Like the porcupine, I sat self-collected, with a quill pointed against every opposer."

"Well said, my boy," cried I, "and what subject did you treat upon? I hope you did not pass over the importance of monogamy. But I interrupt, go on ; you 10 published your paradoxes ; well, and what did the learned world say to your paradoxes?"

"Sir," replied my son, "the learned world said nothing to my paradoxes ; nothing at all, sir. Every man of them was employed in praising his friends and himself, or con- 15 demning his enemies ; and, unfortunately, as I had neither, I suffered the cruellest mortification, neglect.

"As I was meditating one day in a coffee-house on the fate of my paradoxes, a little man, happening to enter the room, placed himself in the box before me, and after 20 some preliminary discourse, finding me to be a scholar, drew out a bundle of proposals, begging me to subscribe to a new edition he was going to give to the world of Propertius, with notes. This demand necessarily produced a reply that I had no money ; and that concession 25 led him to inquire into the nature of my expectations. Finding that my expectations were just as great as my purse, I see, cried he, you are unacquainted with the town : I'll teach you a part of it. Look at these proposals ; upon these very proposals I have subsisted 30 very comfortably for twelve years. The moment a noble-

man returns from his travels, a Creolian arrives from Jamaica, or a dowager from her country-seat, I strike for a subscription. I first besiege their hearts with flattery, and then pour in my proposals at the breach. If they
5 subscribe readily the first time, I renew my request to beg a dedication fee. If they let me have that, I smite them once more for engraving their coat-of-arms at the top. Thus, continued he, I live by vanity, and laugh at it. But, between ourselves, I am now too well
10 known ; I should be glad to borrow your face a bit. A nobleman of distinction has just returned from Italy ; my face is familiar to his porter ; but if you bring this copy of verses, my life for it you succeed, and we divide the spoil."

15 "Bless us, George," cried I, "and is this the employment of poets now? Do men of exalted talents thus stoop to beggary? Can they so far disgrace their calling as to make a vile traffic of praise for bread?"

"Oh no, sir," returned he, "a true poet can never be
20 so base ; for wherever there is genius there is pride. The creatures I now describe are only beggars in rhyme. The real poet, as he braves every hardship for fame, so he is equally a coward to contempt, and none but those who are unworthy protection, condescend to solicit
25 it.

"Having a mind too proud to stoop to such indignities, and yet a fortune too humble to hazard a second attempt for fame, I was now obliged to take a middle course, and write for bread. But I was unqualified for a profession
30 where mere industry alone was to ensure success. I could not suppress my lurking passion for applause ; but

usually consumed that time in efforts after excellence which takes up but little room, when it should have been more advantageously employed in the diffusive productions of fruitful mediocrity. My little piece would therefore come forth in the midst of periodical publication, 5 unnoticed and unknown. The public were more importantly employed than to observe the easy simplicity of my style, or the harmony of my periods. Sheet after sheet was thrown off to oblivion. My essays were buried among the essays upon liberty, Eastern tales, and cures 10 for the bite of a mad dog ; while Philautos, Philaethes, Phileleutheros, and Philanthropos all wrote better, because they wrote faster than I.

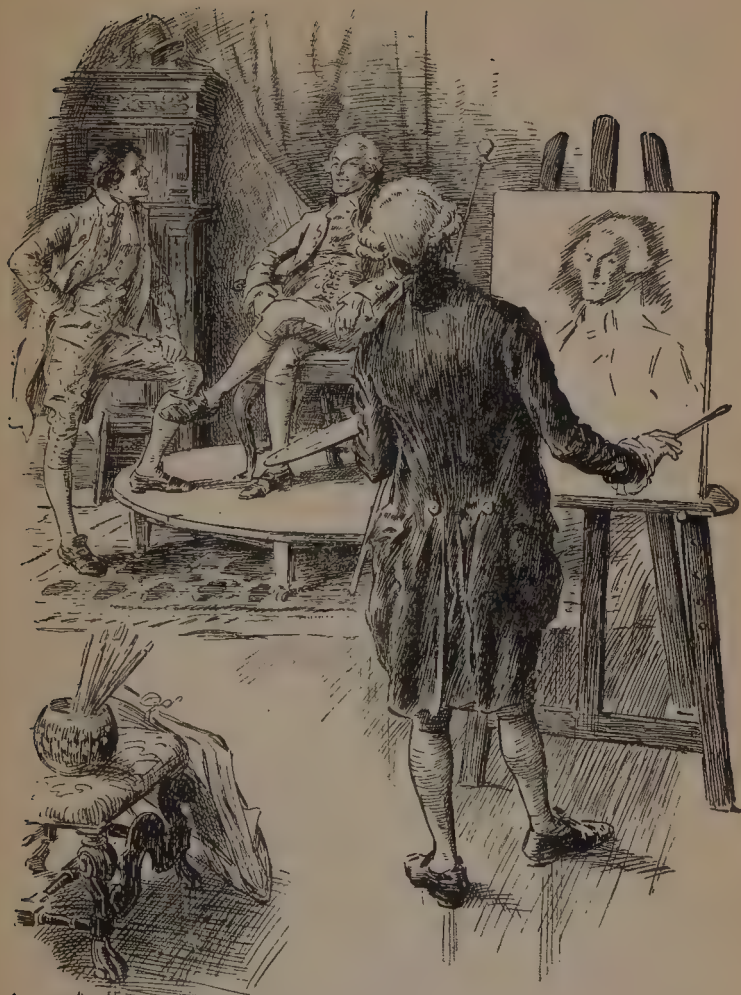
“ Now, therefore, I began to associate with none but disappointed authors, like myself, who praised, deplored, 15 and despised each other. The satisfaction we found in every celebrated writer’s attempts was inversely as their merits. I found that no genius in another could please me. My unfortunate paradoxes had entirely dried up that source of comfort. I could neither read nor write 20 with satisfaction ; for excellence in another was my aversion, and writing was my trade.

“ In the midst of these gloomy reflections, as I was one day sitting on a bench in St James’s Park, a young gentleman of distinction, who had been my intimate acquaint- 25 ance at the university, approached me. We saluted each other with some hesitation ; he almost ashamed of being known to one who made so shabby an appearance, and I afraid of a repulse. But my suspicions soon vanished ; for Ned Thornhill was at the bottom a very good-natured 30 fellow.”

“What did you say, George?” interrupted I. “Thornhill, was not that his name? It can certainly be no other than my landlord.”—“Bless me,” cried Mrs. Arnold, “is Mr. Thornhill so near a neighbour of yours? 5 He has long been a friend in our family, and we expect a visit from him shortly.”

“My friend’s first care,” continued my son, “was to alter my appearance by a very fine suit of his own clothes, and then I was admitted to his table upon the footing of 10 half-friend, half-underling. My business was to attend him at auctions, to put him in spirits when he sat for his picture, to take the left hand in his chariot when not filled by another, and to assist at tattering a kip, as the phrase was, when we had a mind for a frolic. Besides 15 this, I had twenty other little employments in the family. I was to do many small things without bidding : to carry the corkscrew, to stand godfather to all the butler’s children, to sing when I was bid, to be never out of humour, always to be humble, and, if I could, to be very 20 happy.

“In this honourable post, however, I was not without a rival. A captain of marines, who was formed for the place by nature, opposed me in my patron’s affections. His mother had been laundress to a man of quality, and thus 25 he early acquired a taste for pimping and pedigree. As this gentleman made it the study of his life to be acquainted with lords, though he was dismissed from several for his stupidity, yet he found many of them, who were as dull as himself, that permitted his assiduities. As flattery 30 was his trade, he practised it with the easiest address imaginable ; but it came awkward and stiff from me ; and



C. E. Brock
1897

"To put him in spirits
when he sat for his picture"

as every day my patron's desire of flattery increased, so every hour, being better acquainted with his defects, I became more unwilling to give it. Thus I was once more fairly going to give up the field to the captain, when my friend found occasion for my assistance. This was nothing less than to fight a duel for him, with a gentleman whose sister it was pretended he had used ill. I readily complied with his request, and, though I see you are displeased at my conduct, yet, as it was a debt indispensably due to friendship, I could not refuse. I undertook the affair, disarmed my antagonist, and soon after had the pleasure of finding that the lady was only a woman of the town, and the fellow her bully and a sharper. This piece of service was repaid with the warmest professions of gratitude ; but as my friend was to leave town in a few days, he knew no other method of serving me but by recommending me to his uncle Sir William Thornhill, and another nobleman of great distinction, who enjoyed a post under the government. When he was gone, my first care was to carry his recommendatory letter to his uncle, a man whose character for every virtue was universal, yet just. I was received by his servants with the most hospitable smiles ; for the looks of the domestics ever transmit their master's benevolence. Being shown into a grand apartment, where Sir William soon came to me, I delivered my message and letter, which he read, and after pausing some minutes, Pray sir, cried he, inform me what you have done for my kinsman to deserve this warm recommendation? But I suppose, sir, I guess your merits : you have fought for him ; and so you would expect a reward from me for being the instru-

ment of his vices. I wish, sincerely wish, that my present refusal may be some punishment for your guilt ; but still more, that it may be some inducement to your repentance. — The severity of this rebuke I bore patiently, 5 because I knew it was just. My whole expectations now, therefore, lay in my letter to the great man. As the doors of the nobility are almost ever beset with beggars, all ready to thrust in some sly petition, I found it no easy matter to gain admittance. However, after bribing the 10 servants with half my worldly fortune, I was at last shown into a spacious apartment, my letter being previously sent up for his lordship's inspection. During this anxious interval I had full time to look round me. Everything was grand and of happy contrivance ; the paintings, the 15 furniture, the gildings, petrified me with awe, and raised my idea of the owner. Ah, thought I to myself, how very great must the possessor of all these things be, who carries in his head the business of the State, and whose house displays half the wealth of a kingdom : sure his genius 20 must be unfathomable ! During these awful reflections I heard a step come heavily forward. Ah, this is the great man himself ! No, it was only a chambermaid. Another foot was heard soon after. This must be he ! No, it was only the great man's valet de chambre. At 25 last his lordship actually made his appearance. Are you, cried he, the bearer of this here letter ? I answered with a bow. I learn by this, continued he, as how that — But just at that instant a servant delivered him a card, and, without taking farther notice, 30 he went out of the room, and left me to digest my own happiness at leisure. I saw no more of him, till told by

a footman that his lordship was going to his coach at the door. Down I immediately followed, and joined my voice to that of three or four more, who came, like me, to petition for favours. His lordship, however, went too fast for us, and was gaining his chariot door with large 5 strides, when I hallooed out to know if I was to have any reply. He was by this time got in, and muttered an answer, half of which I only heard, the other half was lost in the rattling of his chariot-wheels. I stood for some time with my neck stretched out, in the posture of one 10 that was listening to catch the glorious sounds, till looking round me, I found myself alone at his lordship's gate.

"My patience," continued my son, "was now quite exhausted: stung with the thousand indignities I had met with, I was willing to cast myself away, and only 15 wanted the gulf to receive me. I regarded myself as one of those vile things that nature designed should be thrown by into her lumber room, there to perish in obscurity. I had still, however, half a guinea left, and of that I thought nature herself should not deprive 20 me; but, in order to be sure of this, I was resolved to go instantly and spend it while I had it, and then trust to occurrences for the rest. As I was going along with this resolution, it happened that Mr. Crispe's office seemed invitingly open to give me a welcome reception. 25 In this office Mr. Crispe kindly offers all his majesty's subjects a generous promise of thirty pounds a year, for which promise all they give in return is their liberty for life, and permission to let him transport them to America as slaves. I was happy at finding a place where I could 30 lose my fears in desperation, and entered this cell, for it

had the appearance of one, with the devotion of a monastic. Here I found a number of poor creatures, all in circumstances like myself, expecting the arrival of Mr. Crispe, presenting a true epitome of English impatience. Each untractable soul at variance with Fortune wreaked her injuries on their own hearts: but Mr. Crispe at last came down and all our murmurs were hushed. He deigned to regard me with an air of peculiar approbation, and, indeed, he was the first man who for a month past had talked to me with smiles. After a few questions, he found I was fit for everything in the world. He paused awhile upon the properest means of providing for me, and, slapping his forehead as if he had found it, assured me that there was at that time an embassy talked of from the Synod of Pennsylvania to the Chickasaw Indians, and that he would use his interest to get me made secretary. I knew in my own heart that the fellow lied, and yet his promise gave me pleasure, there was something so magnificent in the sound. I fairly, therefore, divided my half-guinea, one half of which went to be added to his thirty thousand pound, and with the other half I resolved to go to the next tavern to be there more happy than he.

“As I was going out with that resolution, I was met at the door by the captain of a ship, with whom I had formerly some little acquaintance, and he agreed to be my companion over a bowl of punch. As I never chose to make a secret of my circumstances, he assured me that I was upon the very point of ruin, in listening to the office-keeper’s promises; for that he only designed to sell me to the plantations. But, continued he, I fancy

you might by a much shorter voyage be very easily put into a genteel way of bread. Take my advice. My ship sails to-morrow for Amsterdam. What if you go in her as a passenger? The moment you land, all you have to do is to teach the Dutchmen English, and I'll warrant you'll 5 get pupils and money enough. I suppose you understand English, added he, by this time, or the deuce is in it. I confidently assured him of that; but expressed a doubt whether the Dutch would be willing to learn English. He affirmed with an oath that they were 10 fond of it to distraction; and upon that affirmation I agreed with his proposal, and embarked the next day to teach the Dutch English in Holland. The wind was fair, our voyage short; and, after having paid my passage with half my movables, I found myself, fallen as from 15 the skies, a stranger in one of the principal streets of Amsterdam. In this situation I was unwilling to let any time pass unemployed in teaching. I addressed myself, therefore, to two or three of those I met, whose appearance seemed most promising; but it was impossible to 20 make ourselves mutually understood. It was not till this very moment I recollected that in order to teach Dutchmen English, it was necessary that they should first teach me Dutch. How I came to overlook so obvious an objection is to me amazing; but certain it is I 25 overlooked it.

“This scheme thus blown up, I had some thoughts of fairly shipping back to England again; but falling into company with an Irish student who was returning from Louvain, our conversation turning upon topics of litera- 30 ture (for, by the way, it may be observed that I always

forgot the meanness of my circumstances when I could converse upon such subjects), from him I learned that there were not two men in his whole university who understood Greek. This amazed me. I instantly
5 resolved to travel to Louvain, and there live by teaching Greek ; and in this design I was heartened by my brother student, who threw out some hints that a fortune might be got by it.

“ I set boldly forward the next morning. Every day
10 lessened the burden of my movables, like Æsop and his basket of bread ; for I paid them for my lodgings to the Dutch as I travelled on. When I came to Louvain, I was resolved not to go sneaking to the lower professors, but openly tendered my talents to the principal himself.
15 I went, had admittance, and offered him my service as a master of the Greek language, which I had been told was a desideratum in this university. The *principal* seemed at first to doubt of my abilities ; but of these I offered to convince him, by turning a part of any Greek author
20 he should fix upon into Latin. Finding me perfectly earnest in my proposal, he addressed me thus : You see me, young man, continued he ; I never learned Greek, and I don't find that I have ever missed it. I have had a doctor's cap and gown without Greek ; I have
25 ten thousand florins a year without Greek ; I eat heartily without Greek ; and, in short, continued he, as I don't know Greek, I do not believe there is any good in it.

“ I was now too far from home to think of returning ; so I resolved to go forward. I had some knowledge of
30 music, with a tolerable voice : and now turned what was my amusement into a present means of subsistence. I

passed among the harmless peasants of Flanders, and among such of the French as were poor enough to be very merry ; for I ever found them sprightly in proportion to their wants. Whenever I approached a peasant's house towards nightfall, I played one of my most merry 5 tunes, and that procured me not only a lodging, but subsistence for the next day. I once or twice attempted to play for people of fashion ; but they always thought my performance odious, and never rewarded me even with a trifle. This was to me the more extraordinary, as 10 whenever I used in better days to play for company, when playing was my amusement, my music never failed to throw them into raptures, and the ladies especially ; but as it was now my only means, it was received with contempt — a proof how ready the world is to underrate 15 those talents by which a man is supported.

“ In this manner I proceeded to Paris with no design but just to look about me, and then to go forward. The people of Paris are much fonder of strangers that have money than of those that have wit. As I could not boast 20 much of either, I was no great favourite. After walking about the town four or five days, and seeing the outsides of the best houses, I was preparing to leave this retreat of venal hospitality, when, passing through one of the principal streets, whom should I meet but our cousin 25 to whom you first recommended me. This meeting was very agreeable to me, and I believe not displeasing to him. He inquired into the nature of my journey to Paris, and informed me of his own business there, which was to collect pictures, medals, intaglios, and antiques of 30 all kinds for a gentleman in London who had just stepped

into taste and a large fortune. I was the more surprised at seeing our cousin pitched upon for this office, as he himself had often assured me he knew nothing of the matter. Upon asking how he had been taught the art of a cognoscento so very suddenly, he assured me that nothing was more easy. The whole secret consisted in a strict adherence to two rules: the one, always to observe that the picture might have been better if the painter had taken more pains; and the other, to praise the works of Pietro Perugino. But, says he, as I once taught you how to be an author in London, I'll now undertake to instruct you in the art of picture-buying at Paris.

“With this proposal I very readily closed, as it was living, and now all my ambition was to live. I went, therefore, to his lodgings, improved my dress by his assistance, and after some time accompanied him to auctions of pictures, where the English gentry were expected to be purchasers. I was not a little surprised at his intimacy with people of the best fashion, who referred themselves to his judgment upon every picture or medal, as an unerring standard of taste. He made very good use of my assistance upon these occasions; for when asked his opinion, he would gravely take me aside and ask mine, shrug, look wise, return, and assure the company that he could give no opinion upon an affair of so much importance. Yet there was sometimes an occasion for a more supported assurance. I remember to have seen him, after giving his opinion that the colouring of a picture was not mellow enough, very deliberately take a brush with brown varnish, that was accidentally lying

by, and rub it over the piece with great composure before all the company, and then ask if he had not improved the tints.

“When he had finished his commission in Paris, he left me strongly recommended to several men of distinction 5 as a person very proper for a travelling tutor, and after some time, I was employed in that capacity by a gentleman who brought his ward to Paris, in order to set him forward on his tour through Europe. I was to be the young gentleman’s governor, but with a proviso that he 10 should always be permitted to govern himself. My pupil, in fact, understood the art of guiding in money concerns much better than I. He was heir to a fortune of about two hundred thousand pounds, left him by an uncle in the West Indies; and his guardians, to qualify him for the 15 management of it, had bound him apprentice to an attorney. Thus avarice was his prevailing passion: all his questions on the road were how money might be saved; which was the least expensive course of travel; whether anything could be bought that would turn to 20 account when disposed of again in London. Such curiosities on the way as could be seen for nothing he was ready enough to look at; but if the sight of them was to be paid for, he usually asserted that he had been told they were not worth seeing. He never paid a bill 25 that he would not observe how amazingly expensive travelling was; and all this though he was not yet twenty-one. When arrived at Leghorn, as we took a walk to look at the port and shipping, he inquired the expense of the passage by sea home to England. This, he was 30 informed, was but a trifle compared to his returning by

land ; he was, therefore, unable to withstand the temptation ; so, paying me the small part of my salary that was due, he took leave, and embarked with only one attendant for London.

5 “ I now, therefore, was left once more upon the world at large ; but, then, it was a thing I was used to. However, my skill in music could avail me nothing in a country where every peasant was a better musician than I ; but by this time I had acquired another talent, which answered
10 my purpose as well, and this was a skill in disputation. In all the foreign universities and convents there are, upon certain days, philosophical theses maintained against every adventitious disputant ; for which, if the champion opposes with any dexterity, he can claim a gratuity in money, a
15 dinner, and a bed for one night. In this manner, therefore, I fought my way towards England, walked along from city to city, examined mankind more nearly, and, if I may so express it, saw both sides of the picture. My remarks, however, are but few : I found that monarchy
20 was the best government for the poor to live in, and commonwealths for the rich. I found that riches, in general, were in every country another name for freedom ; and that no man is so fond of liberty himself as not to be desirous of subjecting the will of some individuals in society to his
25 own.

“ Upon my arrival in England, I resolved to pay my respects first to you, and then to enlist as a volunteer in the first expedition that was going forward ; but on my journey down my resolutions were changed by meeting an old
30 acquaintance, who, I found, belonged to a company of comedians that were going to make a summer campaign

in the country. The company seemed not much to disapprove of me for an associate. They all, however, apprised me of the importance of the task at which I aimed ; that the public was a many-headed monster, and that only such as had very good heads could please it ; that acting 5 was not to be learned in a day ; and that without some traditional shrugs which had been on the stage, and only on the stage, these hundred years, I could never pretend to please. The next difficulty was in fitting me with parts, as almost every character was in keeping. I was driven 10 for some time from one character to another, till at last Horatio was fixed upon, which the presence of the present company has happily hindered me from acting."

James

CHAPTER XXI.

THE SHORT CONTINUANCE OF FRIENDSHIP AMONGST THE VICIOUS, WHICH IS COEVAL ONLY WITH MUTUAL SATISFACTION.

My son's account was too long to be delivered at once ; the first part of it was begun that night, and he was concluding the rest after dinner the next day, when the appearance of Mr. Thornhill's equipage at the door seemed
5 to make a pause in the general satisfaction. The butler, who was now become my friend in the family, informed me, with a whisper, that the Squire had already made some overtures to Miss Wilmot, and that her aunt and uncle seemed highly to approve the match. Upon Mr.
10 Thornhill's entering, he seemed, at seeing my son and me, to start back ; but I readily imputed that to surprise, and not displeasure. However, upon our advancing to salute him, he returned our greeting with the most apparent candour, and after a short time his presence served only
15 to increase the general good-humour.

After tea he called me aside to inquire after my daughter ; but upon my informing him that my inquiry was unsuccessful, he seemed greatly surprised, adding that he had been since frequently at my house, in order to comfort the rest
20 of my family, whom he left perfectly well. He then asked

if I had communicated her misfortune to Miss Wilmot or my son ; and, upon my replying that I had not told them as yet, he greatly approved my prudence and precaution, desiring me by all means to keep it a secret : “ For at best,” cried he, “ it is but divulging one’s own infamy ; 5 and perhaps Miss Livy may not be so guilty as we all imagine.” We were here interrupted by a servant, who came to ask the Squire in, to stand up at country-dances ; so that he left me quite pleased with the interest he seemed to take in my concerns. His addresses, however, to Miss 10 Wilmot were too obvious to be mistaken ; and yet she seemed not perfectly pleased, but bore them rather in compliance to the will of her aunt than from real inclination. I had even the satisfaction to see her lavish some kind looks upon my unfortunate son, which the other could 15 neither extort by his fortune nor assiduity. Mr. Thornhill’s seeming composure, however, not a little surprised me : we had now continued here a week, at the pressing instances of Mr. Arnold ; but each day the more tenderness Miss Wilmot showed my son, Mr. Thornhill’s friend- 20 ship seemed proportionably to increase for him.

He had formerly made us the most kind assurances of using his interest to serve the family, but now his generosity was not confined to promises alone : the morning I designed for my departure, Mr. Thornhill came to me 25 with looks of real pleasure to inform me of a piece of service he had done for his friend George. This was nothing less than his having procured him an ensign’s commission in one of the regiments that was going to the West Indies, for which he had promised but one hundred 30 pounds, his interest having been sufficient to get an abate-

ment of the other two. "As for this trifling piece of service," continued the young gentleman, "I desire no other reward but the pleasure of having served my friend ; and as for the hundred pounds to be paid, if you are unable
5 to raise it yourselves, I will advance it, and you shall repay me at your leisure." This was a favour we wanted words to express our sense of : I readily, therefore, gave my bond for the money, and testified as much gratitude as if I never intended to pay.

10 George was to depart for town the next day to secure his commission, in pursuance of his generous patron's directions, who judged it highly expedient to use despatch, lest in the meantime another should step in with more advantageous proposals. The next morning, therefore,
15 our young soldier was early prepared for his departure, and seemed the only person among us that was not affected by it. Neither the fatigues and dangers he was going to encounter, nor the friends and mistress — for Miss Wilmot actually loved him — he was leaving behind,
20 any way damped his spirits. After he had taken leave of the rest of the company, I gave him all I had, my blessing. "And now, my boy," cried I, "thou art going to fight for thy country, remember how thy brave grandfather fought for his sacred king, when loyalty among
25 Britons was a virtue. Go, my boy, and imitate him in all but his misfortunes, if it was a misfortune to die with Lord Falkland. Go, my boy, and if you fall, though distant, exposed, and unwept by those that love you, the most precious tears are those with which heaven bedews
30 the unburied head of a soldier."

The next morning I took leave of the good family that

had been kind enough to entertain me so long, not without several expressions of gratitude to Mr. Thornhill for his late bounty. I left them in the enjoyment of all that happiness which affluence and good-breeding procure, and returned towards home, despairing of ever finding 5 my daughter more, but sending a sigh to heaven to spare and forgive her. I was now come within about twenty miles of home, having hired an horse to carry me, as I was yet but weak, and comforted myself with the hopes of soon seeing all I held dearest upon earth. But the 10 night coming on, I put up at a little public-house by the roadside, and asked for the landlord's company over a pint of wine. We sat beside his kitchen fire, which was the best room in the house, and chatted on politics and the news of the country. We happened, among other 15 topics, to talk of young Squire Thornhill, who, the host assured me, was hated as much as his uncle Sir William, who sometimes came down to the country, was loved. He went on to observe that he made it his whole study to betray the daughters of such as received him to their 20 houses, and, after a fortnight or three weeks' possession, turned them out unrewarded, and abandoned to the world.

As we continued our discourse in this manner, his wife, who had been out to get change, returned ; and, perceiv- 25 ing that her husband was enjoying a pleasure in which she was not a sharer, she asked him, in an angry tone, what he did there ; to which he only replied, in an ironical way, by drinking her health. "Mr. Symonds," cried she, "you use me very ill, and I'll bear it no longer. 30 Here three parts of the business is left for me to do, and

the fourth left unfinished, while you do nothing but soak with the guests all day long ; whereas if a spoonful of liquor were to cure me of a fever, I never touch a drop."

I now found what she would be at, and immediately
5 poured her out a glass, which she received with a courtesy ; and, drinking towards my good health, " Sir," resumed she, " it is not so much for the value of the liquor I am angry, but one cannot help it when the house is going out of the windows. If the customers
10 or guests are to be dunned, all the burden lies upon my back ; he'd as lief eat that glass as budge after them himself. There, now, above stairs, we have a young woman who has come to take up her lodging here, and I don't believe she has got any money, by her over-civility.
15 I am certain she is very slow of payment, and I wish she were put in mind of it." — " What signifies minding her ? " cried the host ; " if she be slow, she is sure." — " I don't know that," replied the wife ; " but I know that I am sure she has been here a fortnight, and we have not
20 yet seen the cross of her money." — " I suppose, my dear," cried he, " we shall have it all in a lump." — " In a lump ! " cried the other ; " I hope we may get it any way ; and that I am resolved we will this very night, or out she tramps, bag and baggage." — " Consider, my dear," cried
25 the husband, " she is a gentlewoman, and deserves more respect." — " As for the matter of that," returned the hostess, " gentle or simple, out she shall pack with a sussarara. Gentry may be good things where they take ; but, for my part, I never saw much good of them at the
30 Sign of the Harrow."

Thus saying, she ran up a narrow flight of stairs that



"Welcome, any way welcome
my dearest lost one"

C. F. Brock
1897

went from the kitchen to a room overhead, and I soon perceived by the loudness of her voice and the bitterness of her reproaches that no money was to be had from her lodger. I could hear her remonstrances very distinctly : “ Out, I say ! pack out this moment ! tramp, 5 thou infamous strumpet, or I’ll give thee a mark thou won’t be the better for this three months ! What ! you trumpery, to come and take up an honest house without cross or coin to bless yourself with ! Come along, I say.” — “ Oh, dear madam,” cried the stranger, 10 “ pity me ; pity a poor abandoned creature for one night, and death will soon do the rest ! ” — I instantly knew the voice of my poor ruined child Olivia. I flew to her rescue, while the woman was dragging her along by her hair, and I caught the dear forlorn wretch in my arms. 15 “ Welcome, any way welcome, my dearest lost one, my treasure, to your poor old father’s bosom ! Though the vicious forsake thee, there is yet one in the world that will never forsake thee ; though thou hadst ten thousand crimes to answer for, he will forget them all ! ” — 20 “ Oh, my own dear ” — for minutes she could no more — “ my own dearest, good papa ! Could angels be kinder ! How do I deserve so much ! The villain, I hate him and myself, to be a reproach to so much goodness ! You can’t forgive me. I know you cannot.” — “ Yes, my child, 25 from my heart I do forgive thee. Only repent, and we both shall yet be happy. We shall see many pleasant days yet, my Olivia.” — “ Ah ! never, sir, never. The rest of my wretched life must be infamy abroad and shame at home. But, alas ! papa, you look much paler 30 than you used to do. Could such a thing as I am give

you so much uneasiness? Surely you have too much wisdom to take the miseries of my guilt upon yourself.” — “Our wisdom, young woman,” replied I — “Ah, why so cold a name, papa?” cried she. “This is the first
5 time you ever called me by so cold a name.” — “I ask pardon, my darling,” returned I; “but I was going to observe that wisdom makes but a slow defence against trouble, though at last a sure one.” The landlady now returned to know if we did not choose a more genteel
10 apartment; to which assenting, we were shown a room where we could converse more freely. After we had talked ourselves into some degree of tranquillity, I could not avoid desiring some account of the gradations that led her to her present wretched situation. “That villain,
15 sir,” said she, “from the first day of our meeting made me honourable, though private proposals.”

“Villain, indeed,” cried I; “and yet it in some measure surprises me how a person of Mr. Burchell’s good sense and seeming honour could be guilty of such delib-
20 erate baseness, and thus step into a family to undo it.”

“My dear papa,” returned my daughter, “you labour under a strange mistake. Mr. Burchell never attempted to deceive me: instead of that, he took every opportunity of privately admonishing me against the artifices of Mr.
25 Thornhill, who I now find was even worse than he represented him.” — “Mr. Thornhill,” interrupted I; “can it be?” — “Yes, sir,” returned she; “it was Mr. Thornhill who seduced me; who employed the two ladies, as he called them, but who in fact were abandoned women of the
30 town, without breeding or pity, to decoy us up to London. Their artifices, you may remember, would have certainly

succeeded but for Mr. Burchell's letter, who directed those reproaches at them which we all applied to ourselves. How he came to have so much influence as to defeat their intentions still remains a secret to me ; but I am convinced he was ever our warmest, sincerest friend." 5

"You amaze me, my dear," cried I ; "but now I find my first suspicions of Mr. Thornhill's baseness were too well grounded ; but he can triumph in security, for he is rich and we are poor. But tell me, my child, sure it was no small temptation that could thus obliterate all the 10 impressions of such an education and so virtuous a disposition as thine."

"Indeed, sir," replied she, "he owes all his triumph to the desire I had of making him, and not myself, happy. I knew that the ceremony of our marriage, which was 15 privately performed by a popish priest, was no way binding, and that I had nothing to trust to but his honour." — "What !" interrupted I, "and were you indeed married by a priest, and in orders?" — "Indeed, sir, we were," replied she, "though we were both sworn to conceal his 20 name." — "Why, then, my child, come to my arms again ; and now you are a thousand times more welcome than before, for you are now his wife to all intents and purposes ; nor can all the laws of man, though written upon tables of adamant, lessen the force of that sacred connection." 25

"Alas ! papa," replied she, "you are but little acquainted with his villainies : he has been married already by the same priest to six or eight wives more, whom, like me, he has deceived and abandoned."

"Has he so?" cried I ; "then we must hang the priest, 30 and you shall inform against him to-morrow." — "But,

sir," returned she, "will that be right when I am sworn to secrecy?" — "My dear," I replied, "if you have made such a promise, I cannot, nor will I, tempt you to break it. Even though it may benefit the public, you must not inform against him. In all human institutions a smaller evil is allowed to procure a greater good; as in politics, a province may be given away to secure a kingdom; in medicine, a limb may be lopped off to preserve the body. But in religion, the law is written and inflexible, *never* to do evil. And this law, my child, is right; for otherwise, if we commit a smaller evil to procure a greater good, certain guilt would be thus incurred in expectation of contingent advantage. And though the advantage should certainly follow, yet the interval between commission and advantage, which is allowed to be guilty, may be that in which we are called away to answer for the things we have done, and the volume of human actions is closed for ever. But I interrupt you, my dear; go on."

"The very next morning," continued she, "I found what little expectations I was to have from his sincerity. That very morning he introduced me to two unhappy women more, whom, like me, he had deceived, but who lived in contented prostitution. I loved him too tenderly to bear such rivals in his affections, and strove to forget my infamy in a tumult of pleasures. With this view I danced, dressed, and talked; but still was unhappy. The gentlemen who visited there told me every moment of the power of my charms, and this only contributed to increase my melancholy, as I had thrown all their power quite away. Thus each day I grew more pensive and he more insolent, till at last the monster had the assur-

ance to offer me to a young baronet of his acquaintance. Need I describe, sir, how his ingratitude stung me? My answer to this proposal was almost madness. I desired to part. As I was going he offered me a purse, but I flung it at him with indignation, and burst from 5 him in a rage, that for a while kept me insensible of the miseries of my situation. But I soon looked round me, and saw myself a vile, abject, guilty thing, without one friend in the world to apply to.

“Just in that interval a stage coach happening to pass 10 by, I took a place, it being my only aim to be driven at a distance from a wretch I despised and detested. I was set down here; where, since my arrival, my own anxiety and this woman’s unkindness have been my only companions. The hours of pleasure that I have passed 15 with my mamma and sister now grow painful to me. Their sorrows are much, but mine are greater than theirs, for mine are mixed with guilt and infamy.”

“Have patience, my child,” cried I, “and I hope things will yet be better. Take some repose to-night, 20 and to-morrow I’ll carry you home to your mother and the rest of the family, from whom you will receive a kind reception. Poor woman, this has gone to her heart; but she loves you still, Olivia, and will forget it.”

CHAPTER XXII.

OFFENCES ARE EASILY PARDONED, WHERE THERE IS LOVE
AT BOTTOM.

THE next morning I took my daughter behind me, and set out on my return home. As we travelled along, I strove by every persuasion to calm her sorrows and fears, and to arm her with resolution to bear the presence of
5 her offended mother. I took every opportunity, from the prospect of a fine country, through which we passed, to observe how much kinder Heaven was to us than we to each other, and that the misfortunes of nature's making were very few. I assured her that she should never
10 perceive any change in my affections, and that during my life, which yet might be long, she might depend upon a guardian and an instructor. I armed her against the censure of the world, showed her that books were sweet un-reproaching companions to the miserable, and that if they
15 could not bring us to enjoy life, they would at least teach us to endure it.

The hired horse that we rode was to be put up that night at an inn by the way, within about five miles from my house ; and as I was willing to prepare my family for my
20 daughter's reception, I determined to leave her that night

at the inn, and to return for her, accompanied by my daughter Sophia, early the next morning. It was night before we reached our appointed stage ; however, after seeing her provided with a decent apartment, and having ordered the hostess to prepare proper refreshments, I kissed 5 her, and proceeded towards home. And now my heart caught new sensations of pleasure the nearer I approached that peaceful mansion. As a bird that had been frightened from its nest, my affections outwent my haste, and hovered round my little fireside with all the rapture of ex- 10 pectation. I called up the many fond things I had to say, and anticipated the welcome I was to receive. I already felt my wife's tender embrace, and smiled at the joy of my little ones. As I walked but slowly, the night waned apace. The labourers of the day were all retired to rest ; 15 the lights were out in every cottage ; no sounds were heard but of the shrilling cock, and the deep-mouthed watch-dog, at hollow distance. I approached my abode of pleasure, and, before I was within a furlong of the place, our honest mastiff came running to welcome me. 20

It was now near midnight that I came to knock at my door ; all was still and silent ; my heart dilated with unutterable happiness, when, to my amazement, I saw the house bursting out in a blaze of fire, and every aperture red with conflagration ! I gave a loud convulsive outcry, 25 and fell upon the pavement insensible. This alarmed my son, who had till this been asleep ; and he, perceiving the flames, instantly waked my wife and daughter, and all running out naked and wild with apprehension recalled me to life with their anguish. But it was only to objects 30 of new terror ; for the flames had by this time caught the

roof of our dwelling, part after part continuing to fall in, while the family stood with silent agony looking on as if they enjoyed the blaze. I gazed upon them and upon it by turns, and then looked round me for my two little
5 ones ; but they were not to be seen. O misery ! “Where,” cried I, “where are my little ones ?” — “They are burned to death in the flames,” says my wife, calmly, “and I will die with them.” That moment I heard the cry of the
10 babes within, who were just awaked by the fire, and nothing could have stopped me. “Where, where are my children,” cried I, rushing through the flames, and bursting the door of the chamber in which they were confined. “Where are my little ones ?” — “Here, dear
15 papa, here we are,” cried they together, while the flames were just catching the bed where they lay. I caught them both in my arms, and snatched them through the fire as fast as possible, while just as I got out, the roof sank in. “Now,” cried I, holding up my children — “now let the flames burn on, and all my possessions perish.
20 Here they are ; I have saved my treasure ! Here, my dearest, here are our treasures, and we shall yet be happy.” We kissed our little darlings a thousand times ; they clasped us round the neck, and seemed to share our transports, while their mother laughed and wept by
25 turns.

I now stood a calm spectator of the flames, and, after some time began to perceive that my arm to the shoulder was scorched in a terrible manner. It was therefore out of my power to give my son any assistance, either in
30 attempting to save our goods, or preventing the flames spreading to our corn. By this time the neighbours were

alarmed, and came running to our assistance; but all they could do was to stand, like us, spectators of the calamity. My goods, among which were the notes I had reserved for my daughters' fortunes, were entirely consumed, except a box with some papers that stood in the kitchen, 5 and two or three things more of little consequence, which my son brought away in the beginning. The neighbours contributed, however, what they could to lighten our distress. They brought us clothes, and furnished one of our out-houses with kitchen utensils; so that by daylight we 10 had another, though a wretched, dwelling to retire to. My honest next neighbour and his children were not the least assiduous in providing us with everything necessary, and offering whatever consolation untutored benevolence could suggest. 15

When the fears of my family had subsided, curiosity to know the cause of my long stay began to take place; having therefore informed them of every particular, I proceeded to prepare them for the reception of our lost one, and though we had nothing but wretchedness now to im- 20 part, I was willing to procure her a welcome to what we had. This task would have been more difficult but for our recent calamity, which had humbled my wife's pride, and blunted it by more poignant afflictions. Being unable to go for my poor child myself, as my arm grew very 25 painful, I sent my son and daughter, who soon returned, supporting the wretched delinquent, who had not the courage to look up at her mother, whom no instructions of mine could persuade to a perfect reconciliation; for women have a much stronger sense of female error than 30 men. "Ah, madam," cried her mother, "this is but a

poor place you are come to after so much finery. My daughter Sophy and I can afford but little entertainment to persons who have kept company only with people of distinction. Yes, Miss Livy, your poor father and I have
5 suffered very much of late ; but I hope Heaven will forgive you." During this reception, the unhappy victim stood pale and trembling, unable to weep or to reply ; but I could not continue a silent spectator of her distress, wherefore, assuming a degree of severity in my voice and
10 manner, which was ever followed with instant submission, "I entreat, woman, that my words may be now marked once for all : I have here brought you back a poor deluded wanderer ; her return to duty demands the revival of our tenderness. The real hardships of life are now coming
15 fast upon us ; let us not, therefore, increase them by dissension among each other. If we live harmoniously together, we may yet be contented, as there are enough of us to shut out the censuring world and keep each other in countenance. The kindness of Heaven is promised to
20 the penitent, and let ours be directed by the example. Heaven, we are assured, is much more pleased to view a repentant sinner than ninety-nine persons who have supported a course of undeviating rectitude. And this is right ; for that single effort by which we stop short in the
25 down-hill path to perdition is itself a greater exertion of virtue than an hundred acts of justice."

CHAPTER XXIII.

NONE BUT THE GUILTY CAN BE LONG AND COMPLETELY
MISERABLE.

SOME assiduity was now required to make our present abode as convenient as possible, and we were soon again qualified to enjoy our former serenity. Being disabled myself from assisting my son in our usual occupations, I read to my family from the few books that were saved, and particularly from such as, by amusing the imagination, contributed to ease the heart. Our good neighbours, too, came every day with the kindest condolence, and fixed a time in which they were all to assist at repairing my former dwelling. Honest farmer Williams was not last among these visitors, but heartily offered his friendship. He would even have renewed his addresses to my daughter ; but she rejected him in such a manner as totally repressed his future solicitations. Her grief seemed formed for continuing, and she was the only person of our little society that a week did not restore to cheerfulness. She now lost that unblushing innocence which once taught her to respect herself, and to seek pleasure by pleasing. Anxiety now had taken strong possession of her mind, her beauty began to be impaired with her constitution,

and neglect still more contributed to diminish it. Every tender epithet bestowed on her sister brought a pang to her heart and a tear to her eye; and as one vice, though cured, ever plants others where it has been, so her former guilt, though driven out by repentance, left jealousy and envy behind. I strove a thousand ways to lessen her care, and even forgot my own pain in a concern for hers, collecting such amusing passages of history as a strong memory and some reading could suggest. “Our happiness, my dear,” I would say, “is in the power of One who can bring it about a thousand unforeseen ways that mock our foresight. If example be necessary to prove this, I’ll give you a story, my child, told us by a grave, though sometimes a romancing historian.

“Matilda was married very young to a Neapolitan nobleman of the first quality, and found herself a widow and a mother at the age of fifteen. As she stood one day caressing her infant son in the open window of an apartment which hung over the river Volturno, the child with a sudden spring leaped from her arms into the flood below, and disappeared in a moment. The mother, struck with instant surprise, and making an effort to save him, plunged in after; but, far from being able to assist the infant, she herself with great difficulty escaped to the opposite shore, just when some French soldiers were plundering the country on that side, who immediately made her their prisoner.

“As the war was then carried on between the French and Italians with the utmost inhumanity, they were going at once to perpetrate those two extremes suggested by appetite and cruelty. This base resolution, however, was

opposed by a young officer, who, though their retreat required the utmost expedition, placed her behind him, and brought her in safety to his native city. Her beauty at first caught his eye, her merit soon after his heart. They were married ; he rose to the highest posts ; they lived 5 long together, and were happy. But the felicity of a soldier can never be called permanent ; after an interval of several years, the troops which he commanded having met with a repulse, he was obliged to take shelter in the city where he had lived with his wife. Here they suffered 10 a siege, and the city at length was taken. Few histories can produce more various instances of cruelty than those which the French and Italians at that time exercised upon each other. It was resolved by the victors upon this occasion to put all the French prisoners to death ; but 15 particularly the husband of the unfortunate Matilda, as he was principally instrumental in protracting the siege. Their determinations were, in general, executed almost as soon as resolved upon. The captive soldier was led forth, and the executioner with his sword stood ready, while the 20 spectators in gloomy silence awaited the fatal blow, which was only suspended till the general, who presided as judge, should give the signal. It was in this interval of anguish and expectation that Matilda came to take her last farewell of her husband and deliverer, deploring her wretched 25 situation, and the cruelty of fate, that had saved her from perishing by a premature death in the river Volturno, to be the spectator of still greater calamities. The general, who was a young man, was struck with surprise at her beauty, and pity at her distress ; but with still stronger 30 emotions when he heard her mention her former dangers.

He was her son, the infant for whom she had encountered so much danger. He acknowledged her at once as his mother, and fell at her feet. The rest may be easily supposed : the captive was set free, and all the happiness 5 that love, friendship, and duty could confer on each were united."

In this manner I would attempt to amuse my daughter ; but she listened with divided attention, for her own misfortunes engrossed all the pity she once had for those of 10 another, and nothing gave her ease. In company she dreaded contempt, and in solitude she only found anxiety. Such was the colour of her wretchedness when we received certain information that Mr. Thornhill was going to be married to Miss Wilmot, for whom I always sus- 15 pected he had a real passion, though he took every opportunity before me to express his contempt both of her person and fortune. This news only served to increase poor Olivia's affliction ; such a flagrant breach of fidelity was more than her courage could support. I was resolved, 20 however, to get more certain information, and to defeat, if possible, the completion of his designs by sending my son to old Mr. Wilmot's with instructions to know the truth of the report, and to deliver Miss Wilmot a letter, intimating Mr. Thornhill's conduct in my family. My son 25 went, in pursuance of my directions, and in three days returned, assuring us of the truth of the account ; but that he had found it impossible to deliver the letter, which he was therefore obliged to leave, as Mr. Thornhill and Miss Wilmot were visiting round the country. They were to 30 be married, he said, in a few days, having appeared together at church the Sunday before he was there in great

splendour, the bride attended by six young ladies, and he by as many gentlemen. Their approaching nuptials filled the whole country with rejoicing, and they usually rode out together in the grandest equipage that had been seen in the country for many years. All the friends of both 5 families, he said, were there, particularly the Squire's uncle, Sir William Thornhill, who bore so good a character. He added that nothing but mirth and feasting were going forward; that all the country praised the young bride's beauty and the bridegroom's fine person, and that 10 they were immensely fond of each other; concluding that he could not help thinking Mr. Thornhill one of the most happy men in the world.

"Why, let him, if he can," returned I; "but, my son, observe this bed of straw and unsheltering roof; those 15 mouldering walls and humid floor; my wretched body thus disabled by fire, and my children weeping round me for bread; you have come home, my child, to all this, yet here, even here, you see a man that would not for a thousand worlds exchange situations. O, my children, 20 if you could but learn to commune with your own hearts, and know what noble company you can make them, you would little regard the elegance and splendour of the worthless. Almost all men have been taught to call life a passage, and themselves the travellers. The similitude 25 still may be improved, when we observe that the good are joyful and serene, like travellers that are going towards home; the wicked but by intervals happy, like travellers that are going into exile."

My compassion for my poor daughter, overpowered 30 by this new disaster, interrupted what I had farther to

observe. I bade her mother support her, and after a short time she recovered. She appeared from that time more calm, and I imagined had gained a new degree of resolution ; but appearances deceived me, for her tranquillity was the languor of overwrought resentment. A supply of provisions, charitably sent us by my kind parishioners, seemed to diffuse new cheerfulness among the rest of the family ; nor was I displeased at seeing them once more sprightly and at ease. It would have
10 been unjust to damp their satisfactions merely to condole with resolute melancholy, or to burden them with a sadness they did not feel. Thus once more the tale went round, and the song was demanded, and cheerfulness condescended to hover round our little habitation.

CHAPTER XXIV.

FRESH CALAMITIES.

THE next morning the sun arose with peculiar warmth for the season, so that we agreed to breakfast together on the honeysuckle bank ; where, while we sat, my youngest daughter, at my request, joined her voice to the concert on the trees about us. It was in this place my poor 5 Olivia first met her seducer, and every object served to recall her sadness. But that melancholy which is excited by objects of pleasure, or inspired by sounds of harmony, soothes the heart instead of corroding it. Her mother, too, upon this occasion, felt a pleasing distress, and wept, 10 and loved her daughter as before. "Do, my pretty Olivia," cried she, "let us have that little melancholy air your papa was so fond of ; your sister Sophy has already obliged us. Do, child ; it will please your old father." She complied in a manner so exquisitely pathetic as 15 moved me.

When lovely woman stoops to folly,
And finds too late that men betray,
What charm can soothe her melancholy,
What art can wash her guilt away ?

The only art her guilt to cover,
To hide her shame from every eye,
To give repentance to her lover,
And wring his bosom is — to die.

5 As she was concluding the last stanza, to which an interruption in her voice from sorrow gave peculiar softness, the appearance of Mr. Thornhill's equipage at a distance alarmed us all, but particularly increased the uneasiness of my eldest daughter, who, desirous of shunning her betrayer, returned to the house with her sister.
10 In a few minutes he was alighted from his chariot, and, making up to the place where I was still sitting, inquired after my health with his usual air of familiarity. "Sir," replied I, "your present assurance only serves to aggravate the baseness of your character; and there was a
15 time when I would have chastised your insolence for presuming thus to appear before me. But now you are safe; for age has cooled my passions, and my calling restrains them."

20 "I vow, my dear sir," returned he, "I am amazed at all this; nor can I understand what it means! I hope you don't think your daughter's late excursion with me had anything criminal in it?"

"Go," cried I; "thou art a wretch, a poor, pitiful
25 wretch, and every way a liar. But your meanness secures you from my anger. Yet, sir, I am descended from a family that would not have borne this! And so, thou vile thing, to gratify a momentary passion, thou hast made one poor creature wretched for life, and polluted a family
30 that had nothing but honour for their portion."

"If she or you," returned he, "are resolved to be mis-



By Brockton
1897.

"Go," cried I.
"thou art a wretch"

erable, I cannot help it. But you may still be happy ; and whatever opinion you may have formed of me, you shall ever find me ready to contribute to it. We can marry her to another in a short time, and, what is more, she may keep her lover beside ; for I protest I shall ever 5 continue to have a true regard for her."

I found all my passions alarmed at this new degrading proposal ; for though the mind may often be calm under great injuries, little villainy can at any time get within the soul, and sting it into rage. "Avoid my sight, thou 10 reptile," cried I, "nor continue to insult me with thy presence ! Were my brave son at home, he would not suffer this ; but I am old and disabled, and every way undone."

"I find," cried he, "you are bent upon obliging me to 15 talk in a harsher manner than I intended. But as I have shown you what may be hoped from my friendship, it may not be improper to represent what may be the consequences of my resentment. My attorney, to whom your late bond has been transferred, threatens hard, nor 20 do I know how to prevent the course of justice, except by paying the money myself, which, as I have been at some expenses lately, previous to my intended marriage, is not so easy to be done. And then my steward talks of 'driving' for the rent : it is certain he knows his duty ; for 25 I never trouble myself with affairs of that nature. Yet still I could wish to serve you, and even to have you and your daughter present at my marriage, which is shortly to be solemnized with Miss Wilmot ; it is even the request of my charming Arabella herself, whom I hope you 30 will not refuse."

“Mr. Thornhill,” replied I, “hear me once for all : as to your marriage with any but my daughter, that I never will consent to ; and though your friendship could raise me to a throne, or your resentment sink me to the grave, yet would I despise both. Thou hast once wofully, irreparably deceived me. I reposed my heart upon thine honour, and have found its baseness. Never more, therefore, expect friendship from me. Go, and possess what fortune has given thee — beauty, riches, health, and pleasure. Go, and leave me to want, infamy, disease, and sorrow. Yet, humbled as I am, shall my heart still vindicate its dignity ; and though thou hast my forgiveness, thou shalt ever have my contempt.”

“If so,” returned he, “depend upon it you shall feel the effects of this insolence, and we shall shortly see which is the fittest object of scorn, you or me.” Upon which he departed abruptly.

My wife and son, who were present at this interview, seemed terrified with apprehension. My daughters, also, finding that he was gone, came out to be informed of the result of our conference, which, when known, alarmed them not less than the rest. But as to myself, I disregarded the utmost stretch of his malevolence ; he had already struck the blow, and now I stood prepared to repel every new effort : like one of those instruments used in the art of war, which, however thrown, still presents a point to receive the enemy.

We soon, however, found that he had not threatened in vain ; for the very next morning his steward came to demand my annual rent, which, by the train of accidents already related, I was unable to pay. The consequence

of my incapacity was his driving my cattle that evening, and their being appraised and sold the next day for less than half their value. My wife and children now, therefore, entreated me to comply upon any terms, rather than incur certain destruction. They even begged of me to admit his visits once more, and used all their little eloquence to paint the calamities I was going to endure, — the terrors of a prison in so rigorous a season as the present, with the danger that threatened my health from the late accident that happened by the fire. But I continued inflexible.

“Why, my treasures,” cried I, “why will you thus attempt to persuade me to the thing that is not right? My duty has taught me to forgive him; but my conscience will not permit me to approve. Would you have me applaud to the world what my heart must internally condemn? Would you have me tamely sit down and flatter our infamous betrayer; and to avoid a prison continually suffer the more galling bonds of mental confinement? No, never! If we are to be taken from this abode, only let us hold to the right, and wherever we are thrown, we can still retire to a charming apartment, when we can look round our own hearts with intrepidity and with pleasure.”

In this manner we spent that evening. Early the next morning, as the snow had fallen in great abundance in the night, my son was employed in clearing it away, and opening a passage before the door. He had not been thus engaged long when he came running in, with looks all pale, to tell us that two strangers, whom he knew to be officers of justice, were making towards the house.

Just as he spoke they came in, and approaching the bed where I lay, after previously informing me of their employment and business, made me their prisoner, bidding me prepare to go with them to the county jail, 5 which was eleven miles off.

“ My friends,” said I, “ this is severe weather in which you have come to take me to a prison ; and it is particularly unfortunate at this time, as one of my arms has lately been burned in a terrible manner, and it has thrown 10 me into a slight fever, and I want clothes to cover me, and I am now too weak and old to walk far in such deep snow ; but, if it must be so —— ”

I then turned to my wife and children, and directed them to get together what few things were left us, and to 15 prepare immediately for leaving this place. I entreated them to be expeditious, and desired my son to assist his elder sister, who, from a consciousness that she was the cause of all our calamities, was fallen, and had lost anguish in insensibility. I encouraged my wife, who, pale and 20 trembling, clasped our affrighted little ones in her arms, that clung to her bosom in silence, dreading to look round at the strangers. In the meantime, my youngest daughter prepared for our departure, and as she received several hints to use despatch, in about an hour we were 25 ready to depart.

CHAPTER XXV.

NO SITUATION, HOWEVER WRETCHED IT SEEMS, BUT HAS
SOME SORT OF COMFORT ATTENDING IT.

WE set forward from this peaceful neighbourhood and walked on slowly. My eldest daughter being enfeebled by a slow fever, which had begun for some days to undermine her constitution, one of the officers, who had an horse, kindly took her up behind him; for even these 5 men cannot entirely divest themselves of humanity. My son led one of the little ones by the hand, and my wife the other, while I leaned upon my youngest girl, whose tears fell not for her own but my distresses.

We were now got from my late dwelling about two 10 miles, when we saw a crowd running and shouting behind us, consisting of about fifty of my poorest parishioners. These, with dreadful imprecations, soon seized upon the two officers of justice, and swearing they would never see their minister go to jail while they had a drop of blood 15 to shed in his defence, were going to use them with great severity. The consequence might have been fatal had I not immediately interposed, and with some difficulty rescued the officers from the hands of the enraged multitude. My children, who looked upon my delivery now as cer- 20

tain, appeared transported with joy, and were incapable of containing their raptures. But they were soon undeceived, upon hearing me address the poor deluded people, who came, as they imagined, to do me service.

5 “What! my friends,” cried I, “and is this the way you love me? Is this the manner you obey the instructions I have given you from the pulpit? Thus to fly in the face of justice, and bring down ruin on yourselves and me! Which is your ringleader? Show me the man that
10 has thus seduced you. As sure as he lives he shall feel my resentment. Alas! my dear deluded flock, return back to the duty you owe to God, to your country, and to me. I shall yet perhaps one day see you in greater felicity here, and contribute to make your lives more
15 happy. But let it at least be my comfort when I pen my fold for immortality, that not one here shall be wanting.”

They now seemed all repentance, and, melting into tears, came one after the other to bid me farewell. I
20 shook each tenderly by the hand, and, leaving them my blessing, proceeded forward without meeting any farther interruption. Some hours before night we reached the town, or rather village; for it consisted but of a few mean houses, having lost all its former opulence, and retaining
25 no marks of its ancient superiority but the jail.

Upon entering, we put up at an inn, where we had such refreshments as could most readily be procured, and I supped with my family with my usual cheerfulness. After seeing them properly accommodated for that night, I
30 next attended the sheriff's officers to the prison, which had formerly been built for the purposes of war, and con-

sisted of one large apartment strongly grated and paved with stone, common to both felons and debtors at certain hours in the four-and-twenty. Besides this, every prisoner had a separate cell, where he was locked in for the night.

I expected upon my entrance to find nothing but lamentations and various sounds of misery; but it was very different. The prisoners seemed all employed in one common design, that of forgetting thought in merriment or clamour. I was apprised of the usual perquisite required upon these occasions, and immediately complied with the demand, though the little money I had was very near being all exhausted. This was immediately sent away for liquor, and the whole prison was soon filled with riot, laughter, and profaneness.

“How,” cried I to myself, “shall men so very wicked be cheerful, and shall I be melancholy! I feel only the same confinement with them, and I think I have more reason to be happy.”

With such reflections I laboured to become cheerful; but cheerfulness was never yet produced by effort, which is itself painful. As I was sitting therefore in a corner of the jail in a pensive posture, one of my fellow-prisoners came up, and, sitting by me, entered into conversation. It was my constant rule in life never to avoid the conversation of any man who seemed to desire it: for if good, I might profit by his instruction; if bad, he might be assisted by mine. I found this to be a knowing man, of strong unlettered sense, but a thorough knowledge of the world, as it is called, or, more properly speaking, of human nature on the wrong side. He asked me if I had

taken care to provide myself with a bed, which was a circumstance I had never once attended to.

“That’s unfortunate,” cried he, “as you are allowed here nothing but straw, and your apartment is very large and cold. However, you seem to be something of a gentleman; and as I have been one myself in my time, part of my bedclothes are heartily at your service.”

I thanked him, professing my surprise at finding such humanity in a jail in misfortunes; adding, to let him
 10 see that I was a scholar, “that the ancient sage seemed to understand the value of company in affliction when he said, *Ton kosmon aire, ei dos ton etairon*; and, in fact,” continued I, “what is the world if it affords only solitude?”

15 “You talk of the world, sir,” returned my fellow-prisoner; “the world is in its dotage, and yet the cosmogony or creation of the world has puzzled the philosophers of every age. What a medley of opinions have they not broached upon the creation of the world! Sanchonia-
 20 thon, Manetho, Berosus, and Ocellus Lucanus have all attempted it in vain. The latter has these words, *Anarchon ara kai atelutaion to pan*, which implies” — “I ask pardon, sir,” cried I, “for interrupting so much learning; but I think I have heard all this before. Have I not had
 25 the pleasure of once seeing you at Welbridge fair, and is not your name Ephraim Jenkinson?” At this demand he only sighed. “I suppose you must recollect,” resumed I, “one Doctor Primrose, from whom you bought a horse?”

30 He now at once recollected me; for the gloominess of the place and the approaching night had prevented his

distinguishing my features before. — “Yes, sir,” returned Mr. Jenkinson, “I remember you perfectly well; I bought a horse, but forgot to pay for him. Your neighbour Flamborough is the only prosecutor I am any way afraid of at the next assizes: for he intends to swear positively 5 against me as a coiner. I am heartily sorry, sir, I ever deceived you, or indeed any man; for you see,” continued he, showing his shackles, “what my tricks have brought me to.”

“Well, sir,” replied I, “your kindness in offering me 10 assistance when you could expect no return shall be repaid with my endeavours to soften or totally suppress Mr. Flamborough’s evidence, and I will send my son to him for that purpose the first opportunity; nor do I in the least doubt that he will comply with my request; and as 15 to my own evidence, you need be under no uneasiness about that.”

“Well, sir,” cried he, “all the return I can make shall be yours. You shall have more than half my bedclothes to-night, and I’ll take care to stand your friend in the 20 prison, where I think I have some influence.”

I thanked him, and could not avoid being surprised at the present youthful change in his aspect; for at the time I had seen him before he appeared at least sixty. — “Sir,” answered he, “you are little acquainted with the world; 25 I had at that time false hair, and have learnt the art of counterfeiting every age from seventeen to seventy. Ah! sir, had I but bestowed half the pains in learning a trade that I have in learning to be a scoundrel, I might have been a rich man at this day. But, rogue as I am, still I may be 30 your friend, and that perhaps when you least expect it.”

We were now prevented from further conversation by the arrival of the jailer's servants, who came to call over the prisoners' names, and lock up for the night. A fellow also with a bundle of straw for my bed attended, 5 who led me along a dark, narrow passage into a room paved like the common prison, and in one corner of this I spread my bed, and the clothes given me by my fellow-prisoner; which done, my conductor, who was civil enough, bade me a good-night. After my usual medi- 10 tations, and having praised my heavenly Corrector, I laid myself down and slept with the utmost tranquillity till morning.

CHAPTER XXVI.

A REFORMATION IN THE JAIL. — TO MAKE LAWS COMPLETE,
THEY SHOULD REWARD AS WELL AS PUNISH.

THE next morning early I was awakened by my family, whom I found in tears at my bedside. The gloomy strength of everything about us, it seems, had daunted them. I gently rebuked their sorrow, assuring them I had never slept with greater tranquillity, and next 5 inquired after my eldest daughter, who was not among them. They informed me that yesterday's uneasiness and fatigue had increased her fever, and it was judged proper to leave her behind. My next care was to send my son to procure a room or two to lodge the family in, 10 as near the prison as conveniently could be found. He obeyed; but could only find one apartment, which was hired at a small expense for his mother and sisters, the jailer with humanity consenting to let him and his two little brothers lie in the prison with me. A bed was there- 15 fore prepared for them in a corner of the room, which I thought answered very conveniently. I was willing, however, previously to know whether my little children chose to lie in a place which seemed to fright them upon entrance.

"Well," cried I, "my good boys, how do you like your bed? I hope you are not afraid to lie in this room, dark as it appears?"

"No, papa," says Dick, "I am not afraid to lie anywhere where you are."

"And I," says Bill, who was yet but four years old, "love every place best that my papa is in."

After this, I allotted to each of the family what they were to do. My daughter was particularly directed to watch her declining sister's health; my wife was to attend me; my little boys were to read to me: "And as for you, my son," continued I, "it is by the labour of your hands we must all hope to be supported. Your wages as a day-labourer will be fully sufficient, with proper frugality, to maintain us all, and comfortably too. Thou art now sixteen years old, and hast strength, and it was given thee, my son, for very useful purposes; for it must save from famine your helpless parents and family. Prepare, then, this evening, to look out for work against to-morrow, and bring home every night what money you earn, for our support."

Having thus instructed him and settled the rest, I walked down to the common prison, where I could enjoy more air and room. But I was not long there when the execrations, lewdness, and brutality that invaded me on every side drove me back to my apartment again. Here I sat for some time, pondering upon the strange infatuation of wretches who, finding all mankind in open arms against them, were labouring to make themselves a future and a tremendous enemy.

Their insensibility excited my highest compassion, and



(C. B. B. B.)
1917

After reading
I entered upon my exhortation

blotted my own uneasiness from my mind. It even appeared a duty incumbent upon me to attempt to reclaim them. I resolved, therefore, once more to return, and in spite of their contempt to give them my advice, and conquer them by perseverance. Going, therefore, 5 among them again, I informed Mr. Jenkinson of my design, at which he laughed heartily, but communicated it to the rest. The proposal was received with the greatest good-humour, as it promised to afford a new fund of entertainment to persons who had now no other resource 10 for mirth but what could be derived from ridicule or debauchery.

I therefore read them a portion of the service with a loud, unaffected voice, and found my audience perfectly merry upon the occasion. Lewd whispers, groans of 15 contrition burlesqued, winking and coughing, alternately excited laughter. However, I continued with my natural solemnity to read on, sensible that what I did might mend some, but could itself receive no contamination from any. 20

After reading, I entered upon my exhortation, which was rather calculated at first to amuse them than to reprove. I previously observed that no other motive but their welfare could induce me to this; that I was their fellow-prisoner, and now got nothing by preaching. I was 25 sorry, I said, to hear them so very profane; because they got nothing by it, but might lose a great deal: "For be assured, my friends," cried I, — "for you are my friends, however the world may disclaim your friendship—though you swore twelve thousand oaths in a day, it would not 30 put one penny in your purse. Then what signifies calling

every moment upon the devil, and courting his friendship, since you find how scurvily he uses you? He has given you nothing here, you find, but a mouthful of oaths and an empty belly ; and, by the best accounts I have of
5 him, he will give you nothing that's good hereafter.

“ If used ill in our dealings with one man, we naturally go elsewhere. Were it not worth your while, then, just to try how you may like the usage of another master, who gives you fair promises at least to come to him? Surely,
10 my friends, of all stupidity in the world his must be the greatest who, after robbing a house, runs to the thief-takers for protection. And yet how are you more wise? You are all seeking comfort from one that has already betrayed you, applying to a more malicious being than
15 any thief-taker of them all ; for they only decoy and then hang you ; but he decoys and hangs, and, what is worst of all, will not let you loose after the hangman is done.”

When I had concluded, I received the compliments of my audience, some of whom came and shook me by the
20 hand, swearing that I was a very honest fellow, and that they desired my further acquaintance. I therefore promised to repeat my lecture next day, and actually conceived some hopes of making a reformation here ; for it had ever been my opinion that no man was past the hour
25 of amendment, every heart lying open to the shafts of reproof if the archer could but take a proper aim. When I had thus satisfied my mind, I went back to my apartment, where my wife prepared a frugal meal, while Mr. Jenkinson begged leave to add his dinner to ours, and
30 partake of the pleasure, as he was kind enough to express it, of my conversation. He had not yet seen my family ;

for as they came to my apartment by a door in the narrow passage already described, by this means they avoided the common prison. Jenkinson, at the first interview, therefore, seemed not a little struck with the beauty of my youngest daughter, which her pensive air contributed 5 to heighten, and my little ones did not pass unnoticed.

"Alas, Doctor," cried he, "these children are too handsome and too good for such a place as this."

"Why, Mr. Jenkinson," replied I, "thank Heaven my children are pretty tolerable in morals; and if they be 10 good, it matters little for the rest."

"I fancy, sir," returned my fellow-prisoner, "that it must give you great comfort to have this little family about you."

"A comfort, Mr. Jenkinson," replied I, "yes, it is 15 indeed a comfort, and I would not be without them for all the world; for they can make a dungeon seem a palace. There is but one way in this life of wounding my happiness, and that is by injuring them."

"I am afraid, then, sir," cried he, "that I am in some 20 measure culpable; for I think I see here," looking at my son Moses, "one that I have injured, and by whom I wish to be forgiven."

My son immediately recollected his voice and features, though he had before seen him in disguise, and taking 25 him by the hand, with a smile, forgave him. "Yet," continued he, "I can't help wondering at what you could see in my face to think me a proper mark for deception."

"My dear sir," returned the other, "it was not your 30 face, but your white stockings and the black riband in

your hair that allured me. But, no disparagement to your parts, I have deceived wiser men than you in my time ; and yet, with all my tricks, the blockheads have been too many for me at last."

5 "I suppose," cried my son, "that the narrative of such a life as yours must be extremely instructive and amusing."

"Not much of either," returned Mr. Jenkinson.

"Those relations which describe the tricks and vices
10 only of mankind, by increasing our suspicion in life, retard our success. The traveller that distrusts every person he meets, and turns back upon the appearance of every man that looks like a robber, seldom arrives in time at his journey's end.

15 "Indeed, I think, from my own experience, that the knowing one is the silliest fellow under the sun. I was thought cunning from my very childhood : when but seven years old, the ladies would say that I was a perfect little man ; at fourteen I knew the world, cocked my
20 hat, and loved the ladies ; at twenty, though I was perfectly honest, yet every one thought me so cunning that not one would trust me. Thus I was at last obliged to turn sharper in my own defence, and have lived ever since, my head throbbing with schemes to deceive, and
25 my heart palpitating with fears of detection. I used often to laugh at your honest, simple neighbour Flamborough, and one way or another generally cheated him once a year. Yet still the honest man went forward without suspicion, and grew rich, while I still continued tricky
30 and cunning, and was poor, without the consolation of being honest. However," continued he, "let me know

your case, and what has brought you here ; perhaps, though I have not skill to avoid a jail myself, I may extricate my friends."

In compliance with this curiosity, I informed him of the whole train of accidents and follies that had plunged 5 me into my present troubles, and my utter inability to get free.

After hearing my story, and pausing some minutes, he slapped his forehead, as if he had hit upon something material, and took his leave, saying he would try what 10 could be done.

CHAPTER XXVII.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

THE next morning I communicated to my wife and children the scheme I had planned of reforming the prisoners, which they received with universal disapprobation, alleging the impossibility and impropriety of it ; adding that my endeavours would no way contribute to their amendment, but might probably disgrace my calling.

“Excuse me,” returned I ; “these people, however fallen, are still men, and that is a very good title to my
10 affections. Good counsel rejected returns to enrich the giver’s bosom ; and though the instruction I communicate may not mend them, yet it will assuredly mend myself. If these wretches, my children, were princes, there would be thousands ready to offer their ministry ; but, in my
15 opinion, the heart that is buried in a dungeon is as precious as that seated upon a throne. Yes, my treasures, if I can mend them, I will ; perhaps they will not all despise me. Perhaps I may catch up even one from the gulf, and that will be great gain ; for is there upon
20 earth a gem so precious as the human soul ?”

Thus saying, I left them, and descended to the common prison, where I found the prisoners very merry, expecting my arrival; and each prepared with some jail trick to play upon the Doctor. Thus, as I was going to begin, one turned my wig awry, as if by accident, and then 5 asked my pardon. A second, who stood at some distance, had a knack of spitting through his teeth, which fell in showers upon my book. A third would cry amen in such an affected tone as gave the rest great delight. A fourth had slyly picked my pocket of my spectacles. 10 But there was one whose trick gave more universal pleasure than all the rest; for observing the manner in which I had disposed my books on the table before me, he very dexterously displaced one of them, and put an obscene jest-book of his own in the place. However, I 15 took no notice of all that this mischievous group of little beings could do, but went on, perfectly sensible that what was ridiculous in my attempt would excite mirth only the first or second time, while what was serious would be permanent. My design succeeded, and in less than six 20 days some were penitent, and all attentive.

It was now that I applauded my perseverance and address, at thus giving sensibility to wretches divested of every moral feeling, and now began to think of doing them temporal services also, by rendering their situation 25 somewhat more comfortable. Their time had hitherto been divided between famine and excess, tumultuous riot and bitter repining. Their only employment was quarrelling among each other, playing at cribbage, and cutting tobacco-stoppers. From this last mode of idle industry 30 I took the hint of setting such as chose to work at cutting

pegs for tobacconists and shoemakers, the proper wood being bought by a general subscription, and, when manufactured, sold by my appointment ; so that each earned something every day : a trifle, indeed, but sufficient to
5 maintain him.

I did not stop here, but instituted fines for the punishment of immorality, and rewards for peculiar industry. Thus, in less than a fortnight, I had formed them into something social and humane, and had the pleasure of
10 regarding myself as a legislator who had brought men from their native ferocity into friendship and obedience.

And it were highly to be wished that legislative power would thus direct the law rather to reformation than severity. That it would seem convinced that the work of
15 eradicating crimes is not by making punishments familiar, but formidable. Then, instead of our present prisons, which find or make men guilty — which enclose wretches for the commission of one crime, and return them, if returned alive, fitted for the perpetration of thousands — we
20 should see, as in other parts of Europe, places of penitence and solitude, where the accused might be attended by such as could give them repentance if guilty, or new motives to virtue if innocent. And this, but not the increasing punishments, is the way to mend a state ; nor
25 can I avoid even questioning the validity of that right which social combinations have assumed of capitally punishing offences of a slight nature. In cases of murder their right is obvious, as it is the duty of us all, from the law of self-defence, to cut off that man who has shown
30 a disregard for the life of another. Against such, all nature rises in arms ; but it is not so against him who steals

my property. Natural law gives me no right to take away his life, as by that the horse he steals is as much his property as mine. If, then, I have any right, it must be from a compact made between us, that he who deprives the other of his horse shall die. But this is a false compact ; because no man has a right to barter his life any more than to take it away, as it is not his own. And, besides, the compact is inadequate, and would be set aside even in a court of modern equity, as there is a great penalty for a very trifling convenience, since it is far better that two men should live than that one man should ride. But a compact that is false between two men is equally so between an hundred, or an hundred thousand ; for as ten millions of circles can never make a square, so the united voice of myriads cannot lend the smallest foundation to falsehood. It is thus that reason speaks, and untutored nature says the same thing. Savages, that are directed by natural law alone, are very tender of the lives of each other ; they seldom shed blood but to retaliate former cruelty.

Our Saxon ancestors, fierce as they were in war, had but few executions in times of peace ; and in all commencing governments that have the print of nature still strong upon them, scarce any crime is held capital.

It is among the citizens of a refined community that penal laws, which are in the hands of the rich, are laid upon the poor. Government, while it grows older, seems to acquire the moroseness of age ; and as if our property were become dearer in proportion as it increased, as if the more enormous our wealth the more extensive our fears, all our possessions are paled up with new edicts

every day, and hung round with gibbets to scare every invader.

I cannot tell whether it is from the number of our penal laws, or the licentiousness of our people, that this country should show more convicts in a year than half the dominions of Europe united. Perhaps it is owing to both ; for they mutually produce each other. When, by indiscriminate penal laws, a nation beholds the same punishment affixed to dissimilar degrees of guilt, from perceiving no distinction in the penalty, the people are led to lose all sense of distinction in the crime, and this distinction is the bulwark of all morality : thus the multitude of laws produce new vices, and new vices call for fresh restraints.

It were to be wished, then, that power, instead of contriving new laws to punish vice, instead of drawing hard the cords of society till a convulsion come to burst them, instead of cutting away wretches as useless before we have tried their utility, instead of converting correction into vengeance, — it were to be wished that we tried the restrictive arts of government, and made law the protector, but not the tyrant, of the people. We should then find that creatures whose souls are held as dross, only wanted the hand of a refiner ; we should then find that creatures now stuck up for long tortures, lest luxury should feel a momentary pang, might, if properly treated, serve to sinew the State in times of danger ; that, as their faces are like ours, their hearts are so too ; that few minds are so base as that perseverance cannot amend ; that a man may see his last crime without dying for it ; and that very little blood will serve to cement our security.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

HAPPINESS AND MISERY RATHER THE RESULT OF PRUDENCE THAN OF VIRTUE IN THIS LIFE; TEMPORAL EVILS OR FELICITIES BEING REGARDED BY HEAVEN AS THINGS MERELY IN THEMSELVES TRIFLING, AND UNWORTHY ITS CARE IN THE DISTRIBUTION.

I HAD now been confined more than a fortnight, but had not since my arrival been visited by my dear Olivia, and I greatly longed to see her. Having communicated my wishes to my wife, the next morning the poor girl entered my apartment leaning on her sister's arm. The change 5 which I saw in her countenance struck me. The numberless graces that once resided there were now fled, and the hand of death seemed to have moulded every feature to alarm me. Her temples were sunk, her forehead was tense, and a fatal paleness sat upon her cheek. 10

"I am glad to see thee, my dear," cried I; "but why this dejection, Livy? I hope, my love, you have too great a regard for me to permit disappointment thus to undermine a life which I prize as my own. Be cheerful, child, and we may yet see happier days." 15

"You have ever, sir," replied she, "been kind to me, and it adds to my pain that I shall never have an opportunity of sharing that happiness you promise. Happiness, I

fear, is no longer reserved for me here ; and I long to be rid of a place where I have only found distress. Indeed, sir, I wish you would make a proper submission to Mr. Thornhill ; it may, in some measure, induce him to pity you, and it will give me relief in dying."

"Never, child," replied I — "never will I be brought to acknowledge my daughter a prostitute ; for though the world may look upon your offence with scorn, let it be mine to regard it as a mark of credulity, not of guilt. My dear, 10 I am no way miserable in this place, however dismal it may seem, and be assured that while you continue to bless me by living, he shall never have my consent to make you more wretched by marrying another."

After the departure of my daughter, my fellow-prisoner, 15 who was by at this interview, sensibly enough expostulated upon my obstinacy in refusing a submission which promised to give me freedom. He observed that the rest of my family was not to be sacrificed to the peace of one child alone, and she the only one who had offended me. 20 "Besides," added he, "I don't know if it be just thus to obstruct the union of man and wife, which you do at present, by refusing to consent to a match you cannot hinder, but may render unhappy."

"Sir," replied I, "you are unacquainted with the man 25 that oppresses us. I am very sensible that no submission I can make could procure me liberty even for an hour. I am told that even in this very room a debtor of his, no later than last year, died for want. But though my submission and approbation could transfer me from hence to 30 the most beautiful apartment he is possessed of, yet I would grant neither, as something whispers me that it

would be giving a sanction to adultery. While my daughter lives no other marriage of his shall ever be legal in my eye. Were she removed, indeed, I should be the basest of men, from any resentment of my own, to attempt putting asunder those who wish for an union. No, villain as he is, I should then wish him married, to prevent the consequences of his future debaucheries. But now should I not be the most cruel of all fathers to sign an instrument which must send my child to the grave, merely to avoid a prison myself; and thus, to escape one pang, break my child's heart with a thousand?"

He acquiesced in the justice of this answer, but could not avoid observing that he feared my daughter's life was already too much wasted to keep me long a prisoner. "However," continued he, "though you refuse to submit to the nephew, I hope you have no objections to laying your case before the uncle, who has the first character in the kingdom for everything that is just and good. I would advise you to send him a letter by the post, intimating all his nephew's ill-usage, and my life for it that in three days you shall have an answer." I thanked him for the hint, and instantly set about complying; but I wanted paper, and, unluckily, all our money had been laid out that morning in provisions: however, he supplied me.

For the three ensuing days I was in a state of anxiety to know what reception my letter might meet with; but in the meantime was frequently solicited by my wife to submit to any conditions rather than remain here, and every hour received repeated accounts of the decline of my daughter's health. The third day and the fourth arrived, but I received no answer to my letter. The complaints of

a stranger against a favourite nephew were no way likely to succeed ; so that these hopes soon vanished, like all my former. My mind, however, still supported itself, though confinement and bad air began to make a visible alteration
5 in my health, and my arm that had suffered in the fire grew worse. My children, however, sat by me, and while I was stretched on my straw read to me by turns, or listened and wept at my instructions. But my daughter's health declined faster than mine : every message from her contributed to increase my apprehensions and pain. The fifth
10 morning after I had written the letter which was sent to Sir William Thornhill, I was alarmed with an account that she was speechless. Now it was that confinement was truly painful to me ; my soul was bursting from its prison to be
15 near the pillow of my child to comfort, to strengthen her, to receive her last wishes, and teach her soul the way to heaven ! Another account came. She was expiring, and yet I was debarred the small comfort of weeping by her. My fellow-prisoner, some time after, came with the last
20 account. He bade me be patient. She was dead ! The next morning he returned and found me with my two little ones, now my only companions, who were using all their innocent efforts to comfort me. They entreated to read to me, and bade me not to cry, for I was now too old
25 to weep. " And is not my sister an angel now, papa ? " cried the eldest, " and why, then, are you sorry for her ? I wish I were an angel out of this frightful place, if my papa were with me." — " Yes," added my youngest darling, " heaven, where my sister is, is a finer place than this,
30 and there are none but good people there, and the people here are very bad."

Mr. Jenkinson interrupted their harmless prattle by observing that, now my daughter was no more, I should seriously think of the rest of my family, and attempt to save my own life, which was every day declining for want of necessaries and wholesome air. He added that it was 5 now incumbent on me to sacrifice any pride or resentment of my own to the welfare of those who depended on me for support ; and that I was now, both by reason and justice, obliged to try to reconcile my landlord.

“Heaven be praised,” replied I, “there is no pride left 10 me now ; I should detest my own heart if I saw either pride or resentment lurking there. On the contrary, as my oppressor has been once my parishioner, I hope one day to present him up an unpolluted soul at the eternal tribunal. No, sir, I have no resentment now ; and 15 though he has taken from me what I held dearer than all his treasures, though he has wrung my heart, for I am sick almost to fainting, very sick, my fellow-prisoner, yet that shall never inspire me with vengeance. I am now willing to approve his marriage, and if this submis- 20 sion can do him any pleasure, let him know that if I have done him any injury, I am sorry for it.”

Mr. Jenkinson took pen and ink, and wrote down my submission nearly as I have expressed it, to which I signed 25 my name. My son was employed to carry the letter to Mr. Thornhill, who was then at his seat in the country. He went, and in about six hours returned with a verbal answer. He had some difficulty, he said, to get a sight of his landlord, as the servants were insolent and suspicious ; but he accidentally saw him as he was going out 30 upon business, preparing for his marriage, which was to

be in three days. He continued to inform us that he stepped up in the humblest manner and delivered the letter, which, when Mr. Thornhill had read, he said that all submission was now too late, and unnecessary; that
5 he heard of our application to his uncle, which met with the contempt it deserved; and, as for the rest, that all future applications should be directed to his attorney, not to him. He observed, however, that as he had a very good opinion of the discretion of the two young
10 ladies, they might have been the most agreeable intercessors.

“Well, sir,” said I to my fellow-prisoner, “you now discover the temper of the man who oppresses me. He can at once be facetious and cruel: but let him use me
15 as he will, I shall soon be free, in spite of all his bolts to restrain me. I am now drawing towards an abode that looks brighter as I approach it: this expectation cheers my afflictions. And though I leave an helpless family of orphans behind me, yet they will not be utterly forsaken;
20 some friend, perhaps, will be found to assist them for the sake of their poor father, and some may charitably relieve them for the sake of their heavenly Father.”

Just as I spoke, my wife, whom I had not seen that day before, appeared with looks of terror, and making efforts,
25 but unable, to speak. “Why, my love,” cried I — “why will you thus increase my afflictions by your own? What though no submissions can turn our severe master, though he has doomed me to die in this place of wretchedness, and though we have lost a darling child, yet still you will
30 find comfort in your other children when I shall be no more.” — “We have indeed lost,” returned, she “a dar-

ling child. My Sophia, my dearest, is gone ! snatched from us, carried off by ruffians ! ”

“ How, madam ! ” cried my fellow-prisoner, “ Miss Sophia carried off by villains ? sure it cannot be ! ”

She could only answer with a fixed look and a flood of 5 tears. But one of the prisoners’ wives who was present, and came in with her, gave us a more distinct account : she informed us that as my wife, my daughter, and herself were taking a walk together on the great road a little way out of the village, a post-chaise and pair drove up to 10 them and instantly stopped. Upon which a well-dressed man, but not Mr. Thornhill, stepping out, clasped my daughter round the waist, and forcing her in, bade the postilion drive on, so that they were out of sight in a moment.

15

“ Now,” cried I, “ the sum of my miseries is made up, nor is it in the power of anything on earth to give me another pang. What ! not one left ! Not to leave me one ! the monster ! the child that was next my heart ! She had the beauty of an angel, and almost the wisdom 20 of an angel. But support that woman, nor let her fall. Not to leave me one ! ”

“ Alas ! my husband,” said my wife, “ you seem to want comfort even more than I. Our distresses are great ; but I could bear this and more, if I saw you but easy. They 25 may take away my children, and all the world, if they leave me but you.”

My son, who was present, endeavoured to moderate our grief ; he bade us take comfort, for he hoped that we might still have reason to be thankful. — “ My child,” cried 30 I ; “ look round the world, and see if there be any happi-

ness left me now. Is not every ray of comfort shut out? while all our bright prospects only lie beyond the grave!" — "My dear father," returned he, "I hope there is still something that will give you an interval of satisfaction, 5 for I have a letter from my brother George." — "What of him, child?" interrupted I; "does he know our misery? I hope my boy is exempt from any part of what his wretched family suffers?" — "Yes, sir," returned he, "he is perfectly gay, cheerful, and happy. His letter 10 brings nothing but good news: he is the favourite of his colonel, who promises to procure him the very next lieutenantancy that becomes vacant!"

"And are you sure of all this?" cried my wife; "are you sure that nothing ill has befallen my boy?" — 15 "Nothing, indeed, madam," returned my son. "You shall see the letter, which will give you the highest pleasure; and if anything can procure you comfort, I am sure that will." — "But are you sure," still repeated she, "that the letter is from himself, and that he is really so happy?" 20 — "Yes, madam," replied he, "it is certainly his, and he will one day be the credit and support of our family." — "Then I thank Providence," cried she, "that my last letter to him has miscarried. Yes, my dear," continued she, turning to me, "I will now confess, that though the 25 hand of Heaven is sore upon us in other instances, it has been favourable here. By the last letter I wrote my son, which was in the bitterness of anger, I desired him, upon his mother's blessing, and if he had the heart of a man, to see justice done his father and sister, and avenge our 30 cause. But, thanks be to Him that directs all things, it has miscarried, and I am at rest." — "Woman," cried I,

"thou hast done very ill, and, at another time my reproaches might have been more severe. Oh! what a tremendous gulf hast thou escaped, that would have buried both thee and him in endless ruin! Providence, indeed, has here been kinder to us than we to ourselves. 5 It has reserved that son to be the father and protector of my children when I shall be away. How unjustly did I complain of being stripped of every comfort, when still I hear that he is happy and insensible of our afflictions; still kept in reserve to support his widowed mother, and 10 to protect his brothers and sisters! But what sisters has he left? He has no sisters now; they are all gone, robbed from me, and I am undone!" — "Father," interrupted my son, "I beg you will give me leave to read this letter; I know it will please you." Upon which, with 15 my permission, he read as follows:

HONOURED SIR, — I have called off my imagination a few moments from the pleasures that surround me to fix it upon objects that are still more pleasing, the dear little fireside at home. My fancy draws that harmless 20 group as listening to every line of this with great composure. I view those faces with delight, which never felt the deforming hand of ambition or distress. But whatever your happiness may be at home, I am sure it will be some addition to it to hear, that I am perfectly pleased 25 with my situation, and every way happy here.

Our regiment is countermanded, and is not to leave the kingdom. The colonel, who professes himself my friend, takes me with him to all companies where he is acquainted; and, after my first visit, I generally find myself received 30

with increased respect upon repeating it. I danced last night with Lady G——; and could I forget you know whom, I might be perhaps successful. But it is my fate still to remember others, while I am myself forgotten by
5 most of my absent friends; and in this number, I fear, sir, that I must consider you, for I have long expected the pleasure of a letter from home to no purpose. Olivia and Sophia, too, promised to write, but seem to have forgotten me. Tell them they are two arrant little
10 baggages, and that I am this moment in a most violent passion with them: yet still, I know not how, though I want to bluster a little, my heart is respondent only to softer emotions. Then tell them, sir, that, after all, I love them affectionately; and be assured of my ever remaining

15

YOUR DUTIFUL SON.

“In all our miseries,” cried I, “what thanks have we not to return that one at least of our family is exempted from what we suffer! Heaven be his guard, and keep my boy thus happy, to be the support of his widowed
20 mother, and the father of these two babes, which is all the patrimony I can now bequeath him! May he keep their innocence from the temptations of want, and be their conductor in the paths of honour!” I had scarce said these words when a noise like that of a tumult
25 seemed to proceed from the prison below: it died away soon after, and a clanking of fetters was heard along the passage that led to my apartment. The keeper of the prison entered, holding a man all bloody, wounded, and fettered with the heaviest irons. I looked with compas-

sion on the wretch as he approached me, but with horror when I found it was my own son. — “My George! my George! and do I behold thee thus? Wounded! fettered! Is this thy happiness? Is this the manner you return to me? Oh that this sight could break my heart 5 at once, and let me die!” — “Where, sir, is your fortitude?” returned my son, with an intrepid voice. “I must suffer; my life is forfeited, and let them take it.”

I tried to restrain my passions for a few minutes in silence, but I thought I should have died with the effort. 10 — “Oh, my boy, my heart weeps to behold thee thus, and I cannot, cannot help it! In the moment that I thought thee blest, and prayed for thy safety, to behold thee thus again! Chained, wounded! And yet the death of the youthful is happy. But I am old, a very 15 old man, and have lived to see this day — to see my children all untimely falling about me, while I continue a wretched survivor in the midst of ruin! May all the curses that ever sunk a soul fall heavy upon the murderer of my children! May he live, like me, to see” — 20

“Hold, sir,” replied my son, “or I shall blush for thee. How, sir! forgetful of your age, your holy calling, thus to arrogate the justice of Heaven, and fling those curses upward that must soon descend to crush thy own gray head with destruction! No, sir, let it be your care now 25 to fit me for that vile death I must shortly suffer; to arm me with hope and resolution; to give me courage to drink of that bitterness which must shortly be my portion.”

“My child, you must not die: I am sure no offence of 30 thine can deserve so vile a punishment. My George

could never be guilty of any crime to make his ancestors ashamed of him."

"Mine, sir," returned my son, "is, I fear, an unpardonable one. When I received my mother's letter from home, I immediately came down, determined to punish the betrayer of our honour, and sent him an order to meet me, which he answered not in person, but by despatching four of his domestics to seize me. I wounded one who first assaulted me, and I fear desperately; but the rest made me their prisoner. The coward is determined to put the law in execution against me; the proofs are undeniable. I have sent a challenge; and as I am the first transgressor upon the statute, I see no hopes of pardon. But you have often charmed me with your lessons of fortitude; let me now, sir, find them in your example."

"And, my son, you shall find them. I am now raised above this world, and all the pleasures it can produce. From this moment I break from my heart all the ties that held it down to earth, and will prepare to fit us both for eternity. Yes, my son, I will point out the way, and my soul shall guide yours in the ascent, for we will take our flight together. I now see, and am convinced, you can expect no pardon here, and I can only exhort you to seek it at that greatest tribunal where we both shall shortly answer. But let us not be niggardly in our exhortation, but let all our fellow-prisoners have a share. Good jailer, let them be permitted to stand here while I attempt to improve them." Thus saying, I made an effort to rise from my straw, but wanted strength, and was able only to recline against the wall. The prisoners as-

sembled themselves according to my directions, for they loved to hear my counsel ; my son and his mother supported me on either side ; I looked and saw that none were wanting, and then addressed them with the following exhortation.

CHAPTER XXIX.

THE EQUAL DEALINGS OF PROVIDENCE DEMONSTRATED WITH REGARD TO THE HAPPY AND THE MISERABLE HERE BELOW. THAT, FROM THE NATURE OF PLEASURE AND PAIN, THE WRETCHED MUST BE REPAID THE BALANCE OF THEIR SUFFERINGS IN THE LIFE HEREAFTER.

“My friends, my children, and fellow-sufferers, when I reflect on the distribution of good and evil here below, I find that much has been given man to enjoy, yet still more to suffer. Though we should examine the whole
5 world, we shall not find one man so happy as to have nothing left to wish for ; but we daily see thousands who by suicide show us they have nothing left to hope. In this life, then, it appears that we cannot be entirely blest, but yet we may be completely miserable.

10 “Why man should thus feel pain, why our wretchedness should be requisite in the formation of universal felicity ; why, when all other systems are made perfect by the perfection of their subordinate parts, the great system should require for its perfection parts that are not
15 only subordinate to others, but imperfect in themselves ; these are questions that never can be explained, and might be useless if known. On this subject Providence

has thought fit to elude our curiosity, satisfied with granting us motives to consolation.

“In this situation, man has called in the friendly assistance of philosophy ; and Heaven, seeing the incapacity of that to console him, has given him the aid of religion. The consolations of philosophy are very amusing, but often fallacious. It tells us that life is filled with comforts, if we will but enjoy them ; and, on the other hand, that, though we unavoidably have miseries here, life is short, and they will soon be over. Thus do these consolations destroy each other ; for if life is a place of comfort, its shortness must be misery ; and if it be long, our griefs are protracted. Thus philosophy is weak ; but religion comforts in a higher strain. Man is here, it tells us, fitting up his mind, and preparing it for another abode. When the good man leaves the body and is all a glorious mind, he will find he has been making himself a heaven of happiness here, while the wretch that has been maimed and contaminated by his vices shrinks from his body with terror, and finds that he has anticipated the vengeance of Heaven. To religion, then, we must hold in every circumstance of life for our truest comfort ; for if already we are happy, it is a pleasure to think that we can make that happiness unending ; and if we are miserable, it is very consoling to think that there is a place of rest. Thus to the fortunate religion holds out a continuance of bliss ; to the wretched, a change from pain.

“But though religion is very kind to all men, it has promised peculiar rewards to the unhappy : the sick, the naked, the houseless, the heavy-laden, and the prisoner have ever most frequent promises in our sacred law.

The Author of our religion everywhere professes himself the wretch's Friend, and, unlike the false ones of this world, bestows all his caresses upon the forlorn. The unthinking have censured this as partiality, as a preference
5 without merit to deserve it. But they never reflect that it is not in the power even of Heaven itself to make the offer of unceasing felicity as great a gift to the happy as to the miserable. To the first eternity is but a single blessing, since at most it but increases what they already
10 possess. To the latter it is a double advantage; for it diminishes their pain here, and rewards them with heavenly bliss hereafter.

"But Providence is in another respect kinder to the poor than to the rich; for as it thus makes the life after
15 death more desirable, so it smoothes the passage there. The wretched have had a long familiarity with every face of terror. The man of sorrows lays himself quietly down, without possessions to regret, and but few ties to stop his departure: he feels only nature's pang in the final separa-
20 tion, and this is no way greater than he has often fainted under before; for after a certain degree of pain, every new breach that death opens in the constitution, nature kindly covers with insensibility.

"Thus Providence has given the wretched two advantages
25 tages over the happy in this life, — greater felicity in dying, and in heaven all that superiority of pleasure which arises from contrasted enjoyment. And this superiority, my friends, is no small advantage, and seems to be one of the pleasures of the poor man in the parable; for though
30 he was already in heaven, and felt all the raptures it could give, yet it was mentioned as an addition to his happiness

that he had once been wretched, and now was comforted ; that he had known what it was to be miserable, and now felt what it was to be happy.

“ Thus, my friends, you see religion does what philosophy could never do : it shows the equal-dealings of Heaven 5 to the happy and the unhappy, and levels all human enjoyments to nearly the same standard. It gives to both rich and poor the same happiness hereafter, and equal hopes to aspire after it. But if the rich have the advantage of enjoying pleasure here, the poor have the endless satis- 10 faction of knowing what it was once to be miserable, when crowned with endless felicity hereafter ; and even though this should be called a small advantage, yet, being an eternal one, it must make up by duration what the temporal happiness of the great may have exceeded by 15 intenseness.

“ These are, therefore, the consolations which the wretched have peculiar to themselves, and in which they are above the rest of mankind ; in other respects, they are below them. They who would know the miseries of 20 the poor must see life and endure it. To declaim on the temporal advantages they enjoy is only repeating what none either believe or practise. The men who have the necessaries of living, are not poor, and they who want them must be miserable. Yes, my friends, we must be 25 miserable. No vain efforts of a refined imagination can soothe the wants of nature, can give elastic sweetness to the dank vapour of a dungeon, or ease to the throbbings of a broken heart. Let the philosopher from his couch of softness tell us that we can resist all these. Alas ! the 30 effort by which we resist them is still the greatest pain !

Death is slight, and any man may sustain it ; but torments are dreadful, and these no man can endure.

“ To us, then, my friends, the promises of happiness in heaven should be peculiarly dear ; for if our reward be in this life alone, we are then indeed of all men the most miserable. When I look round these gloomy walls, made to terrify as well as to confine us ; this light, that only serves to show the horrors of the place ; those shackles, that tyranny has imposed or crime made necessary ; when I survey these emaciated looks and hear those groans, oh, my friends, what a glorious exchange would heaven be for these ! To fly through regions unconfined as air, to bask in the sunshine of eternal bliss, to carol over endless hymns of praise, to have no master to threaten or insult us, but the form of Goodness himself for ever in our eyes — when I think of these things, death becomes the messenger of very glad tidings ; when I think of these things, his sharpest arrow becomes the staff of my support ; when I think of these things, what is there in life worth having ? when I think of these things, what is there that should not be spurned away ? Kings in their palaces should groan for such advantages ; but we, humbled as we are, should yearn for them.

“ And shall these things be ours ? Ours they will certainly be, if we but try for them ; and, what is a comfort, we are shut out from many temptations that would retard our pursuit. Only let us try for them, and they will certainly be ours, and, what is still a comfort, shortly too ; for if we look back on a past life, it appears but a very short span ; and whatever we may think of the rest of life, it will yet be found of less duration : as we grow older

the days seem to grow shorter, and our intimacy with time ever lessens the perception of his stay. Then let us take comfort now, for we shall soon be at our journey's end; we shall soon lay down the heavy burden laid by Heaven upon us; and though Death, the only friend of the wretched, for a little while mocks the weary traveller with the view, and, like his horizon, still flies before him, yet the time will certainly and shortly come when we shall cease from our toil; when the luxurious great ones of the world shall no more tread us to the earth; when we shall think with pleasure of our sufferings below; when we shall be surrounded with all our friends, or such as deserved our friendship; when our bliss shall be unutterable, and still, to crown all, unending."

CHAPTER XXX.

HAPPIER PROSPECTS BEGIN TO APPEAR. | LET US BE INFLEXIBLE, AND FORTUNE WILL AT LAST CHANGE IN OUR FAVOUR. |

WHEN I had thus finished, and my audience was retired, the jailer, who was one of the most humane of his profession, hoped I would not be displeased, as what he did was but his duty, observing that he must be obliged to
5 remove my son into a stronger cell, but that he should be permitted to visit me every morning. I thanked him for his clemency, and, grasping my boy's hand, bade him farewell, and be mindful of the great duty that was before him.

¹⁰ . I again therefore laid me down, and one of my little ones sat by my bedside reading, when Mr. Jenkinson, entering, informed me that there was news of my daughter; for that she was seen by a person about two hours before in a strange gentleman's company, and that
15 they had stopped at a neighbouring village for refreshment, and seemed as if returning to town. He had scarcely delivered this news, when the jailer came, with looks of haste and pleasure, to inform me that my daughter was found. Moses came running in a moment after, cry-
20 ing out that his sister Sophy was below, and coming up with our old friend Mr. Burchell.

Just as he delivered this news my dearest girl entered, and, with looks almost wild with pleasure, ran to kiss me in a transport of affection. Her mother's tears and silence also showed her pleasure. "Here, papa," cried the charming girl—"here is the brave man to 5 whom I owe my delivery; to this gentleman's intrepidity I am indebted for my happiness and safety"—A kiss from Mr. Burchell, whose pleasure seemed even greater than hers, interrupted what she was going to add.

"Ah, Mr. Burchell," cried I, "this is but a wretched habitation you now find us in; and we are now very different from what you last saw us. You were ever our friend; we have long discovered our errors with regard to you, and repented of our ingratitude. After the vile usage you then 15 received at my hands, I am almost ashamed to behold your face; yet I hope you'll forgive me, as I was deceived by a base ungenerous wretch, who, under the mask of friendship, has undone me."

"It is impossible," cried Mr. Burchell, "that I should 20 forgive you, as you never deserved my resentment. I partly saw your delusion then; and as it was out of my power to restrain, I could only pity it."

"It was ever my conjecture," cried I, "that your mind was noble; but now I find it so.—But tell me, my dear 25 child, how thou hast been relieved, or who the ruffians were who carried thee away?"

"Indeed, sir," replied she, "as to the villain who carried me off, I am yet ignorant; for, as my mamma and I were walking out, he came behind us, and, almost be- 30 fore I could call for help, forced me into the post-chaise,

and in an instant the horses drove away. I met several on the road to whom I cried out for assistance, but they disregarded my entreaties. In the meantime the ruffian himself used every art to hinder me from crying out : he
5 flattered and threatened by turns, and swore that, if I continued but silent, he intended no harm. In the meantime I had broken the canvas that he had drawn up, and whom should I perceive at some distance but your old friend Mr. Burchell, walking along with his usual swiftness,
10 with the great stick for which we used so much to ridicule him ! As soon as we came within hearing, I called out to him by name, and entreated his help. I repeated my exclamations several times, upon which, with a very loud voice, he bid the postilion stop ; but the boy took no notice, but
15 drove on with still greater speed. I now thought he could never overtake us, when in less than a minute I saw Mr. Burchell come running up by the side of the horses, and with one blow knock the postilion to the ground. The horses, when he was fallen, soon stopped of them-
20 selves ; and the ruffian, stepping out, with oaths and menaces drew his sword, and ordered him at his peril to retire ; but Mr. Burchell, running up, shivered his sword to pieces, and then pursued him for near a quarter of a mile ; but he made his escape. I was at this
25 time come out myself, willing to assist my deliverer ; but he soon returned to me in triumph. The postilion, who was recovered, was going to make his escape too ; but Mr. Burchell ordered him at his peril to mount again and drive back to town. Finding it impossible to resist, he
30 reluctantly complied, though the wound he had received seemed to me at least to be dangerous. He continued



"With one blow
knock the postillion to the ground"



to complain of the pain as we drove along, so that he at last excited Mr. Burchell's compassion, who, at my request, exchanged him for another at an inn where we called on our return."

"Welcome, then," cried I, "my child! and thou, her 5 gallant deliverer, a thousand welcomes! Though our cheer is but wretched, yet our hearts are ready to receive you. And now, Mr. Burchell, as you have delivered my girl, if you think her a recompense, she is yours: if you can stoop to an alliance with a family so poor as mine, 10 take her; obtain her consent, as I know you have her heart, and you have mine. And let me tell you, sir, that I give you no small treasure. She has been celebrated for beauty, it is true; but that is not my meaning: I give you up a treasure in her mind." 15

"But I suppose, sir," cried Mr. Burchell, "that you are apprised of my circumstances, and of my incapacity to support her as she deserves?"

"If your present objection," replied I, "be meant as an evasion of my offer, I desist; but I know no 20 man so worthy to deserve her as you; and if I could give her thousands, and thousands sought her from me, yet my honest brave Burchell should be my dearest choice."

To all this his silence alone seemed to give a mortify- 25 ing refusal; and, without the least reply to my offer, he demanded if he could not be furnished with refreshments from the next inn; to which being answered in the affirmative, he ordered them to send in the best dinner that could be provided upon such short notice. He 30 bespoke also a dozen of their best wine, and some cor-

dials for me ; adding, with a smile, that he would stretch a little for once, and, though in a prison, asserted he was never better disposed to be merry. The waiter soon made his appearance with preparations for dinner ; a table was lent us by the jailer, who seemed remarkably assiduous ; the wine was disposed in order ; and two very well-dressed dishes were brought in.

My daughter had not yet heard of her poor brother's melancholy situation, and we all seemed unwilling to damp her cheerfulness by the relation. But it was in vain that I attempted to appear cheerful : the circumstances of my unfortunate son broke through all efforts to dissemble ; so that I was at last obliged to damp our mirth by relating his misfortunes, and wishing that he might be permitted to share with us in this little interval of satisfaction. After my guests were recovered from the consternation my account had produced, I requested also that Mr. Jenkinson, a fellow-prisoner, might be admitted ; and the jailer granted my request with an air of unusual submission. The clanking of my son's irons was no sooner heard along the passage than his sister ran impatiently to meet him ; while Mr. Burchell, in the meantime, asked me if my son's name was George ; to which replying in the affirmative, he still continued silent. As soon as my boy entered the room, I could perceive he regarded Mr. Burchell with a look of astonishment and reverence. "Come on," cried I, "my son ; though we are fallen very low, yet Providence has been pleased to grant us some small relaxation from pain. Thy sister is restored to us, and there is her deliverer : to that brave man it is that I am indebted for yet having a

daughter. Give him, my boy, the hand of friendship ; he deserves our warmest gratitude."

My son seemed all this while regardless of what I said, and still continued fixed at respectful distance. — "My dear brother," cried his sister, "why don't you 5 thank my good deliverer? The brave should ever love each other."

He still continued his silence and astonishment, till our guest at last perceived himself to be known ; and, assuming all his native dignity, desired my son to come forward. 10 Never before had I seen anything so truly majestic as the air he assumed upon this occasion. The greatest object in the universe, says a certain philosopher, is a good man struggling with adversity ; yet there is a still greater, which is the good man that comes to relieve it. After 15 he had regarded my son for some time with a superior air, "I again find," said he, "unthinking boy, that the same crime —— " But here he was interrupted by one of the jailer's servants, who came to inform us that a person of distinction, who had driven into town with a 20 chariot and several attendants, sent his respects to the gentleman that was with us, and begged to know when he should think proper to be waited upon. — "Bid the fellow wait," cried our guest, "till I shall have leisure to receive him" ; and then, turning to my son, "I again 25 find, sir," proceeded he, "that you are guilty of the same offence for which you once had my reproof, and for which the law is now preparing its justest punishments. You imagine, perhaps, that a contempt for your own life gives you a right to take that of another ; but 30 where, sir, is the difference between a duellist who haz-

ards a life of no value and the murderer who acts with greater security? Is it any diminution of the gamester's fraud when he alleges that he has staked a counter?"

"Alas, sir," cried I, "whoever you are, pity the poor
5 misguided creature; for what he has done was in obedience to a deluded mother, who, in the bitterness of her resentment, required him, upon her blessing, to avenge her quarrel. Here, sir, is the letter, which will serve to convince you of her imprudence and diminish his guilt."
10 He took the letter and hastily read it over. "This," says he, "though not a perfect excuse, is such a palliation of his fault as induces me to forgive him. And now, sir," continued he, kindly taking my son by the hand, "I see you are surprised at finding me here; but
15 I have often visited prisons upon occasions less interesting. I am now come to see justice done a worthy man, for whom I have the most sincere esteem. I have long been a disguised spectator of thy father's benevolence. I have at his little dwelling enjoyed respect uncontami-
20 nated by flattery, and have received that happiness that courts could not give from the amusing simplicity round his fireside. My nephew has been apprised of my intentions of coming here, and, I find, is arrived. It would be wronging him and you to condemn him without ex-
25 amination. If there be injury, there shall be redress; and this I may say, without boasting, that none have ever taxed the injustice of Sir William Thornhill."

We now found the personage whom we had so long entertained as an harmless, amusing companion was no
30 other than the celebrated Sir William Thornhill, to whose virtues and singularities scarce any were strangers. 'The

poor Mr. Burchell was in reality a man of large fortune and great interest, to whom senates listened with applause, and whom party heard with conviction ; who was the friend of his country, but loyal to his king. My poor wife, recollecting her former familiarity, seemed to shrink 5 with apprehension ; but Sophia, who a few moments before thought him her own, now perceiving the immense distance to which he was removed by fortune, was unable to conceal her tears.

“ Ah ! sir,” cried my wife, with a piteous aspect, “ how 10 is it possible that I can ever have your forgiveness? The slights you received from me the last time I had the honour of seeing you at our house, and the jokes which I audaciously threw out — these jokes, sir, I fear, can never be forgiven.” 15

“ My dear, good lady,” returned he, with a smile, “ if you had your joke, I had my answer. I’ll leave it to all the company if mine were not as good as yours. To say the truth, I know nobody whom I am disposed to be angry with at present but the fellow who so frightened my 20 little girl here. I had not even time to examine the rascal’s person so as to describe him in an advertisement. Can you tell me Sophia, my dear, whether you should know him again? ”

“ Indeed, sir,” replied she, “ I can’t be positive ; yet, 25 now I recollect, he had a large mark over one of his eyebrows.” — “ I ask pardon, madam,” interrupted Jenkinson, who was by, “ but be so good as to inform me if the fellow wore his own red hair? ” — “ Yes, I think so,” cried Sophia. — “ And did your honor,” continued he, 30 turning to Sir William, “ observe the length of his legs? ”

—“I can’t be sure of their length,” cried the baronet; “but I am convinced of their swiftness, for he outran me, which is what I thought few men in the kingdom could have done.” — “Please your honour,” cried Jenkinson, “I know the man: it is certainly the same; the best runner in England; he has beaten Pinwire of Newcastle; Timothy Baxter is his name; I know him perfectly, and the very place of his retreat this moment. If your honour will bid Mr. Jailer let two of his men go
10 with me, I’ll engage to produce him to you in an hour at farthest.” Upon this the jailer was called, who instantly appearing, Sir William demanded if he knew him. “Yes, please your honour,” replied the jailer, “I know Sir William Thornhill well; and everybody that knows
15 anything of him will desire to know more of him.” — “Well, then,” said the baronet, “my request is that you will permit this man and two of your servants to go upon a message by my authority; and, as I am in the commission of the peace, I undertake to secure you.” —
20 “Your promise is sufficient,” replied the other; “and you may, at a minute’s warning, send them over England whenever your honour thinks fit.”

In pursuance of the jailer’s compliance, Jenkinson was despatched in search of Timothy Baxter, while we were
25 amused with the assiduity of our youngest boy Bill, who had just come in and climbed up to Sir William’s neck in order to kiss him. His mother was immediately going to chastise his familiarity, but the worthy man prevented her; and taking the child, all ragged as he was, upon his
30 knee, “What, Bill, you chubby rogue,” cried he, “do you remember your old friend Burchell? And Dick, too,

my honest veteran, are you here? You shall find I have not forgot you." So saying, he gave each a large piece of gingerbread, which the poor fellows ate very heartily, as they had got that morning but a very scanty breakfast. . 5

We now sat down to dinner, which was almost cold ; but previously, my arm still continuing painful, Sir William wrote a prescription, for he had made the study of physic his amusement, and was more than moderately skilled in the profession. This being sent to an apothecary who ¹⁰ lived in the place, my arm was dressed, and I found almost instantaneous relief. We were waited upon at dinner by the jailer himself, who was willing to do our guest all the honour in his power. But before we had well dined, another message was brought from his ¹⁵ nephew, desiring permission to appear, in order to vindicate his innocence and honour ; with which request the baronet complied, and desired Mr. Thornhill to be introduced.

CHAPTER XXXI.

FORMER BENEVOLENCE NOW REPAID WITH UNEXPECTED
INTEREST.

MR. THORNHILL made his appearance with a smile, which he seldom wanted, and was going to embrace his uncle, which the other repulsed with an air of disdain. "No fawning, sir, at present," cried the baronet, with a
5 look of severity ; " the only way to my heart is by the road of honour ; but here I only see complicated instances of falsehood, cowardice, and oppression. How is it, sir, that this poor man, for whom I know you professed a friend-
10 ship, is used thus hardly ? His daughter vilely seduced as a recompense for his hospitality, and he himself thrown into prison, perhaps but for resenting the insult ? His son, too, whom you feared to face as a man " ——

" Is it possible, sir," interrupted his nephew, " that my uncle should object that as a crime which his repeated
15 instructions alone have persuaded me to avoid ? "

" Your rebuke," cried Sir William, " is just ; you have acted in this instance prudently and well, though not quite as your father would have done. My brother, indeed, was the soul of honour ; but thou —— yes, you have acted
20 in this instance perfectly right, and it has my warmest approbation."

“And I hope,” said his nephew, “that the rest of my conduct will not be found to deserve censure. I appeared, sir, with this gentleman’s daughter at some places of public amusement; thus what was levity, scandal called by a harsher name, and it was reported that I had debauched 5 her. I waited on her father in person, willing to clear the thing to his satisfaction, and he received me only with insult and abuse. As for the rest, with regard to his being here, my attorney and steward can best inform you, as I commit the management of business entirely to them. If 10 he has contracted debts and is unwilling or even unable to pay them, it is their business to proceed in this manner, and I see no hardship or injustice in pursuing the most legal means of redress.”

“If this,” cried Sir William, “be as you have stated it, 15 there is nothing unpardonable in your offence; and though your conduct might have been more generous in not suffering this gentleman to be oppressed by subordinate tyranny, yet it has been at least equitable.”

“He cannot contradict a single particular,” replied the 20 Squire: “I defy him to do so, and several of my servants are ready to attest what I say. Thus, sir,” continued he, finding that I was silent — for, in fact, I could not contradict him — “thus, sir, my own innocence is vindicated; but though, at your entreaty, I am ready to forgive this 25 gentleman every other offence, yet his attempts to lessen me in your esteem excite a resentment that I cannot govern. And this too at a time when his son was actually preparing to take away my life; this, I say, was such guilt that I am determined to let the law take its course. I 30 have here the challenge that was sent me, and two wit-

nesses to prove it; one of my servants has been wounded dangerously; and even though my uncle himself should dissuade me, which I know he will not, yet I will see public justice done, and he shall suffer for it."

5 "Thou monster," cried my wife, "hast thou not had vengeance enough already, but must my poor boy feel thy cruelty? I hope that good Sir William will protect us, for my son is as innocent as a child; I am sure he is, and never did harm to man."

10 "Madam," replied the good man, "your wishes for his safety are not greater than mine; but I am sorry to find his guilt too plain; and if my nephew persists" — But the appearance of Jenkinson and the jailer's two servants now called off our attention, who entered, hauling in a tall
15 man very genteelly dressed, and answering the description already given of the ruffian who had carried off my daughter. "Here," cried Jenkinson, pulling him in — "here we have him; and if ever there was a candidate for Tyburn, this is one."

20 The moment Mr. Thornhill perceived the prisoner, and Jenkinson who had him in custody, he seemed to shrink back with terror. His face became pale with conscious guilt, and he would have withdrawn; but Jenkinson, who perceived his design, stopped him. — "What, Squire,"
25 cried he, "are you ashamed of your two old acquaintances, Jenkinson and Baxter? But this is the way that all great men forget their friends, though I am resolved we will not forget you. — Our prisoner, please your honour," continued he, turning to Sir William, "has already confessed all.
30 This is the gentleman reported to be so dangerously wounded; he declares that it was Mr. Thornhill who first

put him upon this affair ; that he gave him the clothes he now wears to appear like a gentleman, and furnished him with the post-chaise. The plan was laid between them that he should carry off the young lady to a place of safety, and that there he should threaten and terrify her ; but 5 Mr. Thornhill was to come in in the meantime, as if by accident, to her rescue, and that they should fight a while, and then he was to run off, by which Mr. Thornhill would have the better opportunity of gaining her affections himself under the character of her defender. 10

Sir William remembered the coat to have been frequently worn by his nephew, and all the rest the prisoner himself confirmed by a more circumstantial account ; concluding that Mr. Thornhill had often declared to him that he was in love with both sisters at the same time. 15

“Heavens !” cried Sir William, “what a viper have I been fostering in my bosom ! And so fond of public justice, too, as he seemed to be ! But he shall have it. Secure him, Mr. Jailer ; yet, hold, I fear there is not legal evidence to detain him.” 20

Upon this, Mr. Thornhill, with the utmost humility, entreated that two such abandoned wretches might not be admitted as evidences against him, but that his servants should be examined. “Your servants !” replied Sir William ; “wretch, call them yours no longer : but come, 25 let us hear what those fellows have to say. Let his butler be called.”

When the butler was introduced, he soon perceived by his former master’s looks that all his power was now over. “Tell me,” cried Sir William sternly, “have you ever 30 seen your master and that fellow dressed up in his clothes

in company together?" — "Yes, please your honour," cried the butler, "a thousand times: he was the man that always brought him his ladies." — "How," interrupted young Mr. Thornhill, "this to my face!" — "Yes,"
5 replied the butler, "or to any man's face. To tell you a truth, Master Thornhill, I never either loved you or liked you, and I don't care if I tell you now a piece of my mind." — "Now, then," cried Jenkinson, "tell his honour whether you know anything of me." — "I can't say,"
10 replied the butler, "that I know much good of you. The night that gentleman's daughter was deluded to our house, you were one of them." — "So, then," cried Sir William, "I find you have brought a very fine witness to prove your innocence: thou stain to humanity! to associate
15 with such wretches!" (But continuing his examination) "You tell me, Mr. Butler, that this was the person who brought him this old gentleman's daughter?" — "No, please your honour," replied the butler, "he did not bring her, for the Squire himself undertook that busi-
20 ness; but he brought the priest that pretended to marry them." — "It is but too true," cried Jenkinson; "I cannot deny it; that was the employment assigned me, and I confess it to my confusion."

"Good heavens!" exclaimed the baronet, "how every
25 new discovery of his villainy alarms me! All his guilt is now too plain, and I find his present prosecution was dictated by tyranny, cowardice, and revenge. At my request, Mr. Jailer, set this young officer now your prisoner free, and trust to me for the consequences.
30 I'll make it my business to set the affair in a proper light to my friend the magistrate who has committed

him. But where is the unfortunate young lady herself? Let her appear to confront this wretch; I long to know by what arts he has seduced her. Entreat her to come in. Where is she?"

"Ah, sir," said I, "that question stings me to the heart: I was once, indeed, happy in a daughter, but her miseries" — Another interruption here prevented me; for who should make her appearance but Miss Arabella Wilmot, who was next day to have been married to Mr. Thornhill! Nothing could equal her surprise at seeing Sir William and his nephew here before her; for her arrival was quite accidental. It happened that she and the old gentleman her father were passing through the town on the way to her aunt's, who had insisted that her nuptials with Mr. Thornhill should be consummated at her house; but stopping for refreshment, they put up at an inn at the other end of the town. It was there from the window that the young lady happened to observe one of my little boys playing in the street, and instantly sending a footman to bring the child to her, she learned from him some account of our misfortunes; but was still kept ignorant of young Mr. Thornhill's being the cause. Though her father made several remonstrances on the impropriety of going to a prison to visit us, yet they were ineffectual; she desired the child to conduct her, which he did, and it was thus she surprised us at a juncture so unexpected.

Nor can I go on, without a reflection on those accidental meetings which, though they happen every day, seldom excite our surprise but upon some extraordinary occasion. To what a fortuitous occurrence do we not

owe every pleasure and convenience of our lives ! How many seeming accidents must unite before we can be clothed or fed ! The peasant must be disposed to labour, the shower must fall, the wind fill the merchant's sail, or numbers must want the usual supply.

We all continued silent for some moments, while my charming pupil, which was the name I generally gave this young lady, united in her looks compassion and astonishment, which gave new finishings to her beauty. “ Indeed, my dear Mr. Thornhill,” cried she to the Squire, who she supposed was come here to succour, and not to oppress us, “ I take it a little unkindly that you should come here without me, or never inform me of the situation of a family so dear to us both : you know I should take as much pleasure in contributing to the relief of my reverend old master here, whom I shall ever esteem, as you can. But I find that, like your uncle, you take a pleasure in doing good in secret.”

“ He find pleasure in doing good ! ” cried Sir William, interrupting her. “ No, my dear, his pleasures are as base as he is. You see in him, madam, as complete a villain as ever disgraced humanity. A wretch who, after having deluded this poor man's daughter, after plotting against the innocence of her sister, has thrown the father into prison, and the eldest son into fetters, because he had courage to face his betrayer. And give me leave, madam, now to congratulate you upon an escape from the embraces of such a monster.”

“ O goodness,” cried the lovely girl, “ how have I been deceived ! Mr. Thornhill informed me for certain

that this gentleman's eldest son, Captain Primrose, was gone off to America with his new-married lady."

"My sweetest miss," cried my wife, "he has told you nothing but falsehoods. My son George never left the kingdom, nor never was married. Though you have forsaken him, he has always loved you too well to think of anybody else; and I have heard him say he would die a bachelor for your sake." She then proceeded to expatiate upon the sincerity of her son's passion; she set his duel with Mr. Thornhill in a proper light; from thence she made a rapid digression to the Squire's debaucheries, his pretended marriages, and ended with a most insulting picture of his cowardice.

"Good Heaven!" cried Miss Wilmot, "how very near have I been to the brink of ruin! But how great is my pleasure to have escaped it! Ten thousand falsehoods has this gentleman told me! He had at last art enough to persuade me that my promise to the only man I esteemed was no longer binding, since he had been unfaithful. By his falsehoods I was taught to detest one equally brave and generous!"

But by this time my son was freed from the encumbrances of justice, as the person supposed to be wounded was detected to be an impostor. Mr. Jenkinson, also, who had acted as his valet de chambre, had dressed up his hair, and furnished him with whatever was necessary to make a genteel appearance. He now, therefore, entered, handsomely dressed in his regimentals; and, without vanity (for I am above it), he appeared as handsome a fellow as ever wore a military dress. As he entered, he made Miss Wilmot a modest and distant bow, for he was

not as yet acquainted with the change which the eloquence of his mother had wrought in his favour. But no decorums could restrain the impatience of his blushing mistress to be forgiven. Her tears, her looks, all contributed to discover the real sensations of her heart for having forgotten her former promise, and having suffered herself to be deluded by an impostor. My son appeared amazed at her condescension, and could scarce believe it real. — “Sure, madam,” cried he, “this is
10 but delusion ! I can never have merited this ! To be blessed thus is to be too happy.” — “No, sir,” replied she, “I have been deceived, basely deceived, else nothing could have ever made me unjust to my promise. You know my friendship, you have long known it ;
15 but forget what I have done ; and as you once had my warmest vows of constancy, you shall now have them repeated ; and be assured that if your Arabella cannot be yours, she shall never be another’s.” — “And no other’s you shall be,” cried Sir William, “if I have
20 any influence with your father.”

This hint was sufficient for my son Moses, who immediately flew to the inn where the old gentleman was, to inform him of every circumstance that had happened. But in the meantime the Squire, perceiving that he was on
25 every side undone, now finding that no hopes were left from flattery or dissimulation, concluded that his wisest way would be to turn and face his pursuers. Thus, laying aside all shame, he appeared the open, hardy villain. “I find, then,” cried he, “that I am to expect no justice
30 here ; but I am resolved it shall be done me. You shall know, sir,” turning to Sir William, “I am no longer a

poor dependant upon your favours. I scorn them. Nothing can keep Miss Wilmot's fortune from me, which, I thank her father's assiduity, is pretty large. The articles and a bond for her fortune are signed, and safe in my possession. It was her fortune, not her 5 person, that induced me to wish for this match; and, possessed of the one, let who will take the other."

This was an alarming blow; Sir William was sensible of the justice of his claims, for he had been instrumental in drawing up the marriage articles himself. Miss Wil- 10 mot, therefore, perceiving that her fortune was irretrievably lost, turning to my son, she asked if the loss of fortune could lessen her value to him. "Though fortune," said she, "is out of my power, at least I have my hand to give."

"And that, madam," cried her real lover, "was indeed 15 all that you ever had to give; at least, all that I ever thought worth the acceptance. And now I protest, my Arabella, by all that's happy, your want of fortune this moment increases my pleasure, as it serves to convince 20 my sweet girl of my sincerity!"

Mr. Wilmot now entering, he seemed not a little pleased at the danger his daughter had just escaped, and readily consented to a dissolution of the match. But, finding that her fortune, which was secured to Mr. Thornhill by 25 bond, would not be given up, nothing could exceed his disappointment. He now saw that his money must all go to enrich one who had no fortune of his own. He could bear his being a rascal; but to want an equivalent to his daughter's fortune was wormwood. He sat, there- 30 fore, for some minutes employed in the most mortifying

speculations, till Sir William attempted to lessen his anxiety. "I must confess, sir," cried he, "that your present disappointment does not entirely displease me. Your immoderate passion for wealth is now justly punished. But though the young lady cannot be rich, she has still a competence sufficient to give content. Here you see an honest young soldier, who is willing to take her without fortune ; they have long loved each other, and for the friendship I bear his father, my interest shall
10 not be wanting in his promotion. Leave, then, that ambition which disappoints you, and for once admit that happiness which courts your acceptance."

"Sir William," replied the old gentleman, "be assured I never yet forced her inclinations, nor will I now. If
15 she still continues to love this young gentleman, let her have him, with all my heart. There is still, thank Heaven, some fortune left, and your promise will make it something more. Only let my old friend here" (meaning me) "give me a promise of settling six thousand pounds
20 upon my girl, if ever he should come to his fortune, and I am ready this night to be the first to join them together."

As it now remained with me to make the young couple happy, I readily gave a promise of making the settlement he required, which, to one who had such little expecta-
25 tions as I, was no great favour. We had now, therefore, the satisfaction of seeing them fly into each other's arms in a transport. "After all my misfortunes," cried my son George, "to be thus rewarded ! Sure this is more than I could ever have presumed to hope for ! To be possessed
30 of all that's good, and after such an interval of pain ! My warmest wishes could never rise so high !"



'After all my misfortunes' cried my son George
"to be thus rewarded"

“Yes, my George,” returned his lovely bride, “now let the wretch take my fortune ; since you are happy without it, so am I. Oh, what an exchange have I made from the basest of men to the dearest, best ! Let him enjoy our fortune ; I can now be happy even in indigence.” 5
“And I promise you,” cried the Squire, with a malicious grin, “that I shall be very happy with what you despise.” — “Hold, hold, sir,” cried Jenkinson, “there are two words to that bargain. As for that lady’s fortune, sir, you shall never touch a single stiver of it. Pray, your 10 honour,” continued he to Sir William, “can the Squire have this lady’s fortune if he be married to another ?” — “How can you make such a simple demand ?” replied the baronet ; “undoubtedly he cannot.” — “I am sorry for that,” cried Jenkinson ; “for as this gentleman and I 15 have been old fellow-sporters, I have a friendship for him. But I must declare, well as I love him, that this contract is not worth a tobacco-stopper, for he is married already.” — “You lie, like a rascal,” returned the Squire, who seemed roused by this insult ; “I never was legally 20 married to any woman.”

“Indeed, begging your honour’s pardon,” replied the other, “you were ; and I hope you will show a proper return of friendship to your own honest Jenkinson, who brings you a wife ; and if the company restrain their curiosity a few minutes, they shall see her.” So saying, he went off with his usual celerity, and left us all unable to form any probable conjecture as to his design. “Ay, let him go,” cried the Squire ; “whatever else I may have done, I defy him there. I am too old now to be 30 frightened with squibs.”

“I am surprised,” said the baronet, “what the fellow can intend by this. Some low piece of humour, I suppose !” — “Perhaps, sir,” replied I, “he may have a more serious meaning. For when we reflect on the various schemes this gentleman has laid to seduce innocence, perhaps some one more artful than the rest has been found able to deceive him. When we consider what numbers he has ruined, how many parents now feel with anguish the infamy and the contamination which he has brought into their families, it would not surprise me if some one of them — Amazement ! Do I see my lost daughter ? Do I hold her ? It is, it is, my life, my happiness ! I thought thee lost, my Olivia, yet still I hold thee — and still thou shalt live to bless me !” The warmest transports of the fondest lover were not greater than mine when I saw him introduce my child, and held my daughter in my arms, whose silence only spoke her raptures.

“And art thou returned to me, my darling,” cried I, “to be my comfort in age !” — “That she is,” cried Jenkinson, “and make much of her, for she is your own honourable child, and as honest a woman as any in the whole room, let the other be who she will. And as for you, Squire, as sure as you stand there, this young lady is your lawful wedded wife. And to convince you that I speak nothing but the truth, here is the license by which you were married together.” So saying, he put the license into the baronet’s hands, who read it, and found it perfect in every respect. “And now, gentlemen,” continued he, “I find you are surprised at all this ; but a few words will explain the difficulty. That there Squire

of renown, for whom I have a great friendship, but that's between ourselves, has often employed me in doing odd little things for him. Among the rest, he commissioned me to procure him a false license and a false priest, in order to deceive this young lady. But as I was very 5 much his friend, what did I do but went and got a true license and a true priest, and married them both as fast as the cloth could make them ! Perhaps you'll think it was generosity that made me do all this. But no. To my shame I confess it, my only design was to keep the 10 license and let the Squire know that I could prove it upon him whenever I thought proper, and so make him come down whenever I wanted money." A burst of pleasure now seemed to fill the whole apartment ; our joy reached even the common room, where the prisoners 15 themselves sympathized,

" And shook their chains
In transport and rude harmony."

Happiness was expanded upon every face, and even Olivia's cheek seemed flushed with pleasure. To be thus 20 restored to reputation, to friends and fortune at once, was a rapture sufficient to stop the progress of decay and restore former health and vivacity. But perhaps among all there was not one who felt sincerer pleasure than I. Still holding the dear-loved child in my arms, I asked my 25 heart if these transports were not delusion. " How could you," cried I, turning to Mr. Jenkinson — " how could you add to my miseries by the story of her death ? But it matters not ; my pleasure at finding her again is more than a recompense for the pain."

“As to your question,” replied Jenkinson, “that is easily answered. I thought the only probable means of freeing you from prison was by submitting to the Squire, and consenting to his marriage with the other young lady. 5 But these you had vowed never to grant while your daughter was living : there was therefore no other method to bring things to bear but by persuading you that she was dead. I prevailed on your wife to join in the deceit, and we have not had a fit opportunity of undeceiving you till now.”

10 In the whole assembly now there appeared only two faces that did not glow with transport. Mr. Thornhill's assurance had entirely forsaken him ; he now saw the gulf of infamy and want before him, and trembled to take the plunge. He therefore fell on his knees before his uncle, 15 and, in a voice of piercing misery, implored compassion. Sir William was going to spurn him away, but at my request he raised him, and, after pausing a few moments, “Thy vices, crimes, and ingratitude,” cried he, “deserve no tenderness ; yet thou shalt not be entirely forsaken ; a 20 bare competence shall be supplied to support the wants of life, but not its follies. This young lady, thy wife, shall be put in possession of a third part of that fortune which was once thine, and from her tenderness alone thou art to expect any extraordinary supplies for the future.” He 25 was going to express his gratitude for such kindness in a set speech ; but the baronet prevented him by bidding him not aggravate his meanness, which was already but too apparent. He ordered him, at the same time, to be gone, and from all his former domestics to choose one 30 such as he should think proper, which was all that should be granted to attend him.



"In a voice of piercing misery
implored compassion"

As soon as he left us, Sir William very politely stepped up to his new niece with a smile, and wished her joy. His example was followed by Miss Wilmot and her father ; my wife, too, kissed her daughter with much affection, as, to use her own expression, she was now made an honest woman of. Sophia and Moses followed in turn, and even our benefactor Jenkinson desired to be admitted to that honour. Our satisfaction seemed scarce capable of increase. Sir William, whose greatest pleasure was in doing good, now looked round with a countenance open as the sun, and saw nothing but joy in the looks of all except that of my daughter Sophia, who, for some reasons we could not comprehend, did not seem perfectly satisfied. "I think now," cried he, with a smile, "that all the company except one or two seem perfectly happy. There only remains an act of justice for me to do. You are sensible, sir," continued he, turning to me, "of the obligations we both owe Mr. Jenkinson ; and it is but just we should both reward him for it. Miss Sophia will, I am sure, make him very happy, and he shall have from me five hundred pounds as her fortune, and upon this, I am sure, they can live very comfortably together. Come, Miss Sophia, what say you to this match of my making? Will you have him?" My poor girl seemed almost sinking into her mother's arms at the hideous proposal. — "Have him, sir!" cried she, faintly. "No, sir, never!" — "What," cried he again, "not have Mr. Jenkinson, your benefactor, a handsome young fellow, with five hundred pounds and good expectations!" — "I beg, sir," returned she, scarce able to speak, "that you'll desist, and not make me so very wretched." — "Was ever such ob-

stinacy known," cried he again, "to refuse a man whom the family has such infinite obligations to, who has preserved your sister, and who has five hundred pounds ! What, not have him ! " — " No, sir, never," replied she, angrily ; " I'd sooner die first." — " If that be the case, then," cried he, " if you will not have him — I think I must have you myself." And, so saying, he caught her to his breast with ardour. " My loveliest, my most sensible of girls," cried he, " how could you ever think your
10 own Burchell could deceive you, or that Sir William Thornhill could ever cease to admire a mistress that loved him for himself alone ? I have for some years sought for a woman who, a stranger to my fortune, could think that I had merit as a man. After having tried in vain, even
15 amongst the pert and the ugly, how great at last must be my rapture to have made a conquest over such sense and such heavenly beauty ! " Then, turning to Jenkinson, " As I cannot, sir, part with this young lady myself, for she has taken a fancy to the cut of my face, all the recom-
20 pense I can make is to give you her fortune, and you may call upon my steward to-morrow for five hundred pounds." Thus we had all our compliments to repeat, and Lady Thornhill underwent the same round of ceremony that her sister had done before. In the meantime
25 Sir William's gentleman appeared to tell us that the equipages were ready to carry us to the inn, where everything was prepared for our reception. My wife and I led the van, and left those gloomy mansions of sorrow. The generous baronet ordered forty pounds to be distributed
30 among the prisoners, and Mr. Wilmot, induced by his example, gave half that sum. We were received below

by the shouts of the villagers, and I saw and shook by the hand two or three of my honest parishioners who were among the number. They attended us to our inn, where a sumptuous entertainment was provided, and coarser provisions were distributed in great quantities among the 5 populace.

After supper, as my spirits were exhausted by the alternation of pleasure and pain which they had sustained during the day, I asked permission to withdraw, and, leaving the company in the midst of their mirth, as soon as I 10 found myself alone I poured out my heart in gratitude to the Giver of joy as well as of sorrow, and then slept undisturbed till morning.

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE CONCLUSION.

THE next morning, as soon as I awaked, I found my eldest son sitting by my bedside, who came to increase my joy with another turn of fortune in my favour. First, having released me from the settlement that I had made 5 the day before in his favour, he let me know that my merchant who had failed in town was arrested at Antwerp, and there had given up effects to a much greater amount than what was due to his creditors. My boy's generosity pleased me almost as much as this unlooked-for good-fort-
10 une. But I had some doubts whether I ought in justice to accept his offer. While I was pondering upon this, Sir William entered the room, to whom I communicated my doubts. His opinion was, that, as my son was already possessed of a very affluent fortune by his marriage, I might
15 accept his offer without any hesitation. His business, however, was to inform me that, as he had the night before sent for the licenses, and expected them every hour he hoped that I would not refuse my assistance in making all the company happy that morning. A footman entered
20 while we were speaking, to tell us that the messenger was

returned ; and as I was by this time ready, I went down, where I found the whole company as merry as affluence and innocence could make them. However, as they were now preparing for a very solemn ceremony, their laughter entirely displeased me. I told them of the 5 grave, becoming, and sublime deportment they should assume upon this mystical occasion, and read them two homilies and a thesis of my own composing, in order to prepare them. Yet they still seemed perfectly refractory and ungovernable. Even as we were going along to 10 church, to which I led the way, all gravity had quite forsaken them, and I was often tempted to turn back in indignation. In church a new dilemma arose, which promised no easy solution. This was which couple should be married first ; my son's bride warmly insisted 15 that Lady Thornhill (that was to be) should take the lead ; but this the other refused with equal ardour, protesting she would not be guilty of such rudeness for the world. The argument was supported for some time between both with equal obstinacy and good-breeding. 20 But as I stood all this time with my book ready, I was at last quite tired of the contest, and, shutting it, "I perceive," cried I, "that none of you have a mind to be married, and I think we had as good go back again ; for I suppose there will be no business done here to-day." 25 This at once reduced them to reason. The baronet and his lady were first married, and then my son and his lovely partner.

I had previously that morning given orders that a coach should be sent for my honest neighbour Flam- 30 borough and his family, by which means, upon our

return to the inn, we had the pleasure of finding the two Miss Flamboroughs alighted before us. Mr. Jenkinson gave his hand to the eldest, and my son Moses led up the other (and I have since found that he has taken a real
5 liking to the girl, and my consent and bounty he shall have whenever he thinks proper to demand them). We were no sooner returned to the inn but numbers of my parishioners, hearing of my success, came to congratulate me; but among the rest were those who rose to rescue
10 me, and whom I formerly rebuked with such sharpness. I told the story to Sir William, my son-in-law, who went out and reproved them with great severity; but, finding them quite disheartened by his harsh reproof, he gave them half a guinea apiece to drink his health and raise
15 their dejected spirits.

Soon after this, we were called to a very genteel entertainment, which was dressed by Mr. Thornhill's cook. And it may not be improper to observe, with respect to that gentleman, that he now resides in quality of com-
20 panion at a relation's house, being very well liked, and seldom sitting at the side-table, except when there is no room at the other; for they make no stranger of him. His time is pretty much taken up in keeping his relation, who is a little melancholy, in spirits, and in learning to
25 blow the French horn. My eldest daughter, however, still remembers him with regret; and she has even told me, though I make a great secret of it, that when he reforms she may be brought to relent.

But to return, for I am not apt to digress thus, when we
30 were to sit down to dinner, our ceremonies were going to be renewed. The question was whether my eldest daugh-

ter, as being a matron, should not sit above the two young brides ; but the debate was cut short by my son George, who proposed that the company should sit indiscriminately, every gentleman by his lady. This was received with great approbation by all, excepting my wife, who, I 5 could perceive, was not perfectly satisfied, as she expected to have had the pleasure of sitting at the head of the table and carving all the meat for all the company. But notwithstanding this, it is impossible to describe our good-humour. I can't say whether we had more wit amongst 10 us now than usual ; but I am certain we had more laughing, which answered the end as well. One jest I particularly remember : old Mr. Wilmot drinking to Moses, whose head was turned another way, my son replied, "Madam, I thank you." Upon which the old gentleman, winking 15 upon the rest of the company, observed that he was thinking of his mistress. At which jest I thought the two Miss Flamboroughs would have died with laughing. As soon as dinner was over, according to my old custom, I requested that the table might be taken away to have the pleasure of 20 seeing all my family assembled once more by a cheerful fireside. My two little ones sat upon each knee, the rest of the company by their partners. I had nothing now on this side of the grave to wish for ; all my cares were over, my pleasure was unspeakable. It now only remained 25 that my gratitude in good-fortune should exceed my former submission in adversity.

NOTES.

1. 4. **Taken orders.** Become a clergyman of the English Episcopal Church.

9. **Notable.** Look up in Dictionary the meaning of the word, as here used.

2. 14. **Herald's Office.** More commonly, Herald's College, or College of Arms. A body of officials, incorporated in 1483, whose business it is to preserve genealogical records and grant coats of arms.

3. 21-22. **Progress.** A journey of state, an official journey.

6. 4-5. **Thirty-five pounds a year.** Cf. description of the preacher in *The Deserted Village*. Goldsmith's father's annual income is reported to have averaged forty pounds.

7. **Temporalities.** A clergyman's revenues from church property, opposed to *spiritualities*, the matters pertaining to religion.

19. **Whiston.** William Whiston (1667-1752), a famous English divine, of great learning and honesty, but of many peculiar notions. One of these — that a clergyman should not marry a second time — is now remembered for Dr. Primrose's sake alone.

8. 23. **Drinking tea.** Tea, in Goldsmith's day, was an expensive luxury, costing from twelve shillings to thirty shillings a pound (\$3 to \$7.50). After their reverses of fortune, the family could afford it only occasionally.

24. **Country dances.** *Country* is here really the French *contre*, opposite, across; and the country-dance, one in which the partners stand opposite to one another.

26. **Backgammon.** This game was much in vogue in Goldsmith's time.

27. **A twopenny hit.** *Hit*, a stake or bet, here limited, by agreement, to twopence, or four cents.

28. **An ominous circumstance.** Look out for other illustrations of the Vicar's habit of dwelling on such little matters of detail. What light is thus thrown on his character?

9. 30-10. 1. **Your fortune . . . is almost nothing.** Here is an illustration of that hurried narration to which reference has been made in the Introduction. The loss of the family fortune, and the breaking-off of the match between George Primrose and Arabella Wilmot, are told in less than a page.

12. 30. **Hooker.** Richard Hooker (1554-1600), called "the Judicious," the greatest of English philosophical theologians. His most famous work is the *Laws of Ecclesiastical Polity*. The story of his journey to London is told in his *Life*, by Izaak Walton, author of *The Complete Angler*.

13. 1. **Bishop Jewel.** John Jewel, or Jewell (1522-71), another great theologian, and one of the leaders of the English Reformation.

4-6. **I have been young, etc.** Where do these lines come from?

17-19. **A journey of seventy miles.** The difficulties of such a journey were in those days enough to fill any one "with apprehension." The country roads were everywhere bad, and in places almost impassable; there was constant danger of accident, and highwaymen were an additional source of alarm.

14. 17. **Beadle.** A petty parish officer. His functions are now scarcely more than nominal, but in former times it was part of his duty to chastise offenders.

25. **Laced.** Trimmed with lace.

16. 2. **Seats.** Country mansions.

17. 31. **I now found that — that.** What do you infer from Mr. Burchell's manifest confusion here?

18. 8. Humourist. Here used in the archaic sense of a person of odd humors or whims, a strange, eccentric person. Cf. Ben Jonson's *Every Man in his Humour*.

20. 8. Temperance. What is the meaning of this word, as here used?

11-14. They kept up the Christmas carol, etc. Look up the history of the various old English customs here referred to.

21. 6-8. Nothing could exceed the neatness of my little enclosures. Cf. the description of the trim English landscape in *The Deserted Village*.

15-16 Coppers. Large vessels for cooking or, more particularly, for washing.

22. 17-18. Johnny Armstrong's Last Good-night, or the Cruelty of Barbara Allen. Titles of favorite old ballads, which will be found in Child's *English and Scottish Ballads*, and Percy's *Reliques of Ancient English Poetry*. Such songs were hawked about the country by pedlers.

20-21. Lessons of the day. The portions of Scripture appointed for each day's reading in the Prayer Book of the English Church.

25. Sumptuary edicts. What were sumptuary laws? Do any now exist in the United States?

23. 9. Faces patched to taste. Patches were small pieces of black silk stuck to the face to heighten by contrast the whiteness of the skin. The habit was particularly prevalent in the early part of the eighteenth century. See Pope's reference in *The Rape of the Lock*, Canto 1, and Addison's paper in *The Spectator*, No. 81.

25. 2-3. A seat, overshadowed by a hedge of hawthorn and honeysuckle. Cf. *The Deserted Village*, lines 13-14.

15. Centaury. The popular name for various English plants belonging to the gentian order. Chiron the Centaur is said to have discovered their medicinal properties.

27. 6. A favourite song of Dryden's. Was Dryden specially famous for his songs? In virtue of what great poems does he hold his high place in English literature?

28. 9. Lottery. Lotteries, raffles, and other forms of speculation were extremely popular in the eighteenth century. The gambling spirit had not been killed by the tragic collapse of the South Sea Bubble some fifty years before *The Vicar of Wakefield* was written.

31. 15-17. The Story of the Buck of Beverland, The History of Patient Grissel, The Adventures of Catskin, Fair Rosamond's Bower. These were popular stories. *The Buck of Beverland* is doubtful. The others will be found in ballad form in Child's *English and Scottish Ballads*. Patient Grissel fills a large place in old literature; but her history was never more charmingly told than in the *Clerk's Tale* of Chaucer. *The Adventures of Catskin* are a variation of the widespread Cinderella story.

26. Hospitality is one of the first Christian duties. Remember poor Goldsmith's many years of homeless wandering, and cf. the passage in *The Deserted Village* beginning:—

“His house was known to all the vagrant train.”

35. 6. Chaplain. Aristocratic country families often maintained a private chaplain as part of the establishment. Cf. this clergyman with Dr. Primrose, and look up the character of the country clergy of the time.

7. Feeder. A man kept to feed hounds and cocks.

13-14. Mistress. A poetic survival of the high-flown language of chivalry, in which a lover proposed himself the faithful servant of the woman he loved.

36. 2. St. Dunstan's. A London church. The figures of two savages stood, one on each side of the clock, and struck the quarters on a bell.

21. Smoked him. *To smoke* is defined by Johnson, “to smell out, to find out.” In eighteenth-century slang it also meant to quiz or ridicule. In the scene which follows, the discomfiture of Moses is evidently a reminiscence of many of Goldsmith's own conversational misadventures. Can you recall, from Goldsmith's life, any case in point? Of course, it would be useless to seek for meaning

in the Squire's tangle of words. He is only making sport of Moses, by talking nonsense in high-sounding phraseology.

39. 4. Freethinker. Defined by Johnson as "a libertine; a contemner of religion."

40. 8. The dispute between Thwackum and Square. The reference is to the amusing windy warfare between Thwackum, the schoolmaster, and Square, a philosopher, in Fielding's *Tom Jones*.

10-11. Religious Courtship. One of Defoe's almost countless works. Its purpose was to exhibit the unhappy consequences of marriage between persons of different persuasions in religion.

42. 4-5. The two lovers, so sweetly described by Mr. Gay. The letter referred to will be found in Thackeray's lecture on Prior, Gay, and Pope (*English Humourists of the Eighteenth Century*). Who was Gay? What was his most successful work?

43. A Ballad. Written, it is supposed, in 1764, but first published in *The Vicar of Wakefield*, probably to help swell the work to the required "two volumes, 12mo" (see *Appendix*). Goldsmith himself entitled the poem *Edwin and Angelina*, but it is usually known as *The Hermit*. It became the subject of some controversy on account of the fact that Goldsmith was accused of having taken at least the idea of it from *The Friar of Orders Gray*, in Percy's *Reliques of Ancient English Poetry* (1765). See his letter to the *St. James's Chronicle* (Masson's ed. of Goldsmith, p. 589), and Percy's note to *The Friar of Orders Gray*, in the *Reliques*.

44. 3. Man wants but little, etc. Cf. *Citizen of the World*, Letter LXVII.: "The running brook, the herbs of the field, can amply supply nature; man wants but little, nor that little long." In this poem, the words are quoted without acknowledgment, from Young (*Night Thoughts*, IV. 9).

52. 29-30. Pictures, taste, Shakespeare, and the musical glasses. Here we have some of the topics of conversation among people who prided themselves on being socially "up to date." The reference to Shakespeare is interesting because it shows how among such people, the great dramatist's plays, after a long period

of comparative neglect, had become a sort of fashionable craze. The foremost figure in the Shakespearian revival on the stage itself was the great actor, David Garrick. Look up his relations with Johnson and Goldsmith. Musical glasses were goblets, "tuned by filling them more or less with water, and played by touching their rims with the wetted finger." They were popular at the time, having been revived and improved by Benjamin Franklin in 1760.

54. 12-13. Coup de main. Pronounced *kōō-dūh-mang* (nasal). French: a bold stroke.

56. 14. Flourishing. Embroidering.

57. 2-3. To cross her hand with silver. Gypsy fortune-tellers regard the crossing of the hand with a silver coin as necessary for correct prognostication. Note the old woman's prophecy and its subsequent fulfilment. Does this mean that Goldsmith himself believed in fortune-telling?

27. Designed by the stars. The old belief in the influence of the stars upon human affairs is preserved in many words; *e.g.*, disaster, influence, etc. Look up their derivations.

58. 11. Coffin and cross-bones, etc. Observe the ancient superstition that dreams "go by contraries."

59. 11. Scrubs. Johnson defines as "mean fellows." Cf. adj. *scrubby*.

21. Smock race. A race run by women for the prize of a fine smock or under-garment.

62. 2. Burn nuts. Roast chestnuts.

7. Lamb's wool. A beverage consisting of ale mixed with sugar, nutmeg, and the pulp of roasted apples.

63. 15-16. A voice that might deafen a ballad singer. A very loud voice; probably in allusion to the stentorian tones of common street ballad-singers.

18-19. Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs. Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia was also the name of the daughter of Beau Tibbs, in the *Citizen of the World* (see Letter LV.).

64. 16-17. Knights of the Garter. When and under what circumstances was the Order of the Garter founded? What rank does it hold among the orders of British knighthood?

21. Rout. A common eighteenth-century word for a fashionable assembly or party; now more generally used for a rabble or noisy crowd. Note any other words you meet with, that have changed their meanings since Goldsmith's time.

29-30. Valet-de-chambre. Pronounced *vă'llā-dűh-shambr*. French: a man-servant who attends his master's person. Generally now simply *valet*, which, as practically Anglicized, is often pronounced by good speakers as an English word.

65. 4. Fudge. The reiteration by Mr. Burchell of this famous comment was one of the changes introduced into the second edition of the book.

23. T'other. This abbreviation had still the sanction of usage in informal writing.

66. 13, ff. My wife had been for a long time all attention, etc. What light is thrown by the present incident on the characters of Mr. and Mrs. Primrose?

67. 6. Cut paper. Cut silhouette portraits out of paper.

68. 19. Entre nous. Pronounced *ängtr nōō*. French: between ourselves.

70. 3. Fitting out Moses for the fair. Notice the various points of the young man's toilet. His hair, worn long, after the fashion of the time, was tied with a ribbon in a queue. *Thunder and lightning cloth* is probably cloth of a very large and startling pattern. *Gosling green* means yellowish green, with reference either to the down on a young goose, or to the catkin on nut trees and pines, also called gosling.

6. Deal box. *Deal*, in England, is especially applied to the wood of the pine or fir.

71. 4-5. By letters. The gingerbread was probably stamped in the form of letters of the alphabet, as is the case with some kinds of small crackers at the present day.

8. **A weasel-skin purse.** The luck-bringing qualities of the weasel seem to belong to Irish superstition.

71. 31-72. 1. **Sell his hen of a rainy day.** A proverbial phrase for making a bargain under unfavorable conditions.

73. 12. **Marry.** What is the origin of this exclamation?

75. 31. **Moralise this fable.** To point out the moral of it. As the Vicar was prevented from accomplishing his design, the student may do this for himself.

76. 6. **Neuter.** What would be the modern word here?

77. 22. **Economist.** Economy, from the Greek, meant especially the management of a house or estate. The student should trace out its derived meanings.

28-30. **But I was not displeased . . . much to fear.** What opinion have you formed of the character of Burchell as developed thus far? Why does he oppose the scheme of sending the girls to town?

80. 16. **Hack.** Trace derivation, and cf. *hackneyed*, *hack-writer*.

16-17. **Cut up for a dog-kennel.** Horse-flesh is still sold for cats and dogs in England. The monotonous cry of the "cats'-meat man" may be heard every morning in the streets of suburban London.

22. **St. Gregory.** There were several theological writers of the name of Gregory, and it is not clear to which reference is made.

82. 7. **Sir.** Notice the repetition of this word in the more formal conversations in the book. This illustrates an eighteenth-century usage common even among friends, as may be seen anywhere in Boswell's *Johnson*.

83. 1-13. **Sanchoniathon**, etc. It is hardly necessary to follow Mr. Jenkinson in his display of learning, which has little meaning, save that it served its purpose in imposing upon the simple Vicar. Sanchoniathon, Manetho, Berosus, and Ocellus Lucanus are all obscure writers; the first a Phœnician historian, the second an Egyptian, the third a Babylonian priest, the fourth a Greek philosopher. The italicized phrases are Greek, written out in English

letters. The second is grammatically incorrect; perhaps through a slip on Goldsmith's part, perhaps through a misprint, possibly by design.

17. Letters. How comes this word to have the meaning in which it is here used?

84. 19. Warm. In the old, colloquial sense of well off, moderately rich.

21. I remember I always beat him at three jumps, etc. "The swindler's method of proving to the Vicar his acquaintance with Solomon Flamborough is a good example of the drollery that Goldsmith loves. . . . Convinced by this touching reminiscence, the Vicar accepts a draft on his neighbour . . . in payment for his horse." — RALEIGH, *The English Novel*, p. 209.

87. 11-12. The copy of a letter. Do you think that this letter will properly bear the interpretation which the Primrose family put upon it? Give your own idea of its meaning.

90. 9. An honest man, etc. From what poem does this famous line come?

19-21. Flemish school. The Flemish school of painting was noted for its laborious and painstaking reproduction of nature; the Roman school for its imaginative qualities.

91. 28-29. I could hang you all for this. This was no idle assertion at a time when capital punishment was in use for a large variety of petty offences.

95. 19. Whistonian controversy. What exquisite humor in this scene — the good Vicar presenting his books in defence of monogamy to the Goddess Venus! Many details in the picture will be noted as illustrating the pervading classic taste in art.

20-21. Green joseph. A riding dress for ladies. The etymology is doubtful; but it has been suggested that the reference is to Joseph's coat of many colors.

98. 8. Parts. What was the eighteenth-century meaning of this word?

103. 3-4. **Brewing tubs.** Beer was then often brewed at home.

5. Death and the Lady. See Bell's *Ballads of the Peasantry*.

13. Elegy. In the *Citizen of the World* (Letter LXIX.), Goldsmith had already ridiculed the fear of mad dogs as one of the "epidemic crazes" to which, he says, the English people are occasionally subject.

105. 7. **The most vulgar ballad,** etc. How far does Goldsmith speak for himself here? What are the characteristics of his own poetry?

17. Ranelagh. Pronounced *Ră'n-e-lah*. A famous place of fashionable resort, often referred to in eighteenth-century novels and essays. The rotunda was one hundred and fifty feet in diameter, with an orchestra in the centre, and tiers of boxes all round. Promenading and tea-drinking were the principal amusements. The building was destroyed early in the present century, and the site is now part of the Chelsea Hospital grounds. Johnson often went to Ranelagh, which, says Boswell, on the authority of Dr. Maxwell, "he deemed a place of innocent recreation."

106. 1. **Fontarabia.** A town in Spain where, it is said, the boat-girls who wished to marry went to display their charms.

26. Just as I spoke, Dick came running in. This is one of the instances in the story in which Goldsmith has sought to bring out the dramatic force of a situation by contrast (see *Introduction*). Keep your eyes open for any further instances.

107. 3. **Undone.** Morally ruined.

108. 25. **Sallies of enthusiasm.** What does this mean?

111. 2. **Wells.** Places of resort, frequented by invalids for the mineral waters, and by many others, for social festivities. Here, perhaps, Harrowgate, a famous watering-place in Yorkshire. See Dobson's *Goldsmith*, pp. 118-119, and the article on the topography of *The Vicar of Wakefield* there mentioned.

112. 12-13. **The philanthropic bookseller.** John Newbery, the publisher, often called the Elder Newbery, to distinguish him

from his nephew, Francis (see *Appendix*). He was intimately associated not only with Goldsmith, but also with Johnson, Smollett, and many other men of letters of the time. His genius for advertising was quite remarkable; he even went so far as to bring allusions to his books and wares into the text of his stories. "He was the first to publish little books for children, such as have ever since been popular; and he was himself, in conjunction with Giles and Griffith Jones . . . and perhaps Goldsmith, part author of some of the best of the series, as the histories of *Goody Two-Shoes* and *Giles Gingerbread*, and *The Travels of Tommy Trip*." He sold medicines as well as books, and was the proprietor of the celebrated St. James's Powder, in which Goldsmith and Walpole put great confidence, and which may have had something to do with the fatal termination of the former's last illness. He was always in a hurry. Cf. the description given of him here with Johnson's humorous sketch of him as Jack Whirler (*Idler*, No. 19): "When he enters a house his first declaration is, that he cannot sit down; and so short are his visits that he seldom appears to have come for any other reason but to say he must go."

113. 21-114. 19. The present state of the stage. Who were the dramatists mentioned in this paragraph? What are the characteristics of Goldsmith's own comedies? Under what influences were they written? What relation did they bear to the drama of the time?

114. 31. Whether I was the real chaplain. It must be remembered that a clergyman of the English Church wears a distinctive costume.

116. 16-17. Monitor—Auditor. These, like the titles that follow, were the names of newspapers of the time.

117. 14-15. Anotherguess manner. Another way. *Guess*, in this rare sense, is a corruption of *guise*.

17. Pillory. The punishment of the pillory was common in England in the eighteenth century, and was not formally abolished till 1837.

118. 7. Levellers. A party in the Long Parliament, about 1647, which advocated the destruction of all distinctions of rank and title.

15-16. **Some are born to command.** Cf. *The Traveller*, lines 371-372.

120. 7-8. Cartesian system. The system of philosophy expounded by the Frenchman, René Descartes (1596-1650), who Latinized his name into Cartesius. His theory of the vortex was, that space is filled with fluid matter, in which each fixed star and planet, by rotary motion, creates a vortex or whirlpool. This hypothesis presently gave way before Newton's doctrine of gravitation.

121. 15-16. Where the laws govern the poor, etc. Cf. *The Traveller*, line 386. The whole poem furnishes an instructive commentary on the political ideas set forth in this chapter.

16. Sacred monarchy. A reference to the theory of the divine right of kings. What was this?

122. 6. Gazetter. Properly, *gazetteer*; a journal of the time.

7-8. Saddled with wooden shoes. Hampered by heavy weights; in reference to the clumsy *sabots* or wooden shoes worn by the Flemish peasants.

124. 13. Fair Penitent. A tragedy by Nicholas Rowe (1673-1718), acted in 1703, and founded on a play of Massinger. Johnson, in his *Life of Rowe*, speaks of it as "one of the most pleasing tragedies on the stage."

127. 16. Usher. Here Goldsmith clearly draws upon his own wretched experiences as usher in the school of Dr. Milner, at Peckham (see Forster, Bk. I, Chap. VI.). The reference to "my ugly face" and the small-pox are undoubtedly autobiographic.

18. Sardonic. Give derivation.

21-22. Arodyne necklace. Literally, a necklace of opium balls, worn to lull pain. Here slang, for a hangman's noose.

22-23. Newgate. A celebrated London prison.

128. 5. To turn a cutler's wheel. To follow the trade of knife-grinding.

19. Grub Street. A street near Moorfields, London, which became famous in the annals of eighteenth-century literature as the

headquarters of the hack writers, who eked out a living by writing for booksellers and the newspapers; whence, says Johnson, "any mean production is called *Grub Street*." The name has remained as a synonym for literary struggle and penury. An account of the condition of men of letters in Goldsmith's time will be found in Macaulay's essay on Croker's *Boswell*. Goldsmith's own Grub Street life should be studied in connection with this paragraph. The *Antiqua Mater*, or Ancient Mother, is the tutelary genius of the place, "the goddess of this region."

129. 24. Propertius. A Roman elegiac poet, born about 48 B.C., died about 14 B.C.

131. 4-8. My little piece, etc. How far is this personal? Is Goldsmith's style characterized by "easy simplicity"? Give illustrations.

10. Eastern tales. These were very popular in the eighteenth century, and were generally given a moral turn, after the fashion of the time. See *Citizen of the World*, Letter XXXIII. One of the earliest examples of this class of composition is Addison's *Vision of Mirza*. What famous work of Johnson belongs to the same order?

11-12. Philautos, etc. Pseudonyms employed, or supposed to be employed, by different writers. They are all from the Greek; *Philautos* = a lover of self; *Philaethes* = a lover of truth; *Phileleutheros* = a lover of freedom; *Philanthropos* = a lover of mankind. In his Preface to the *Essays*, of 1765, Goldsmith, complaining that others had laid claim to his anonymous compositions, wrote: "I have seen some of my labours sixteen times repeated, and claimed by different parents as their own. I have seen them flourished at the beginning with praise, and signed at the end with the names of Philautos, Philaethes, Phileleutheros, and Philanthropos."

17-18. Inversely as their merits. Why was this so?

24. St. James's Park. One of the great London parks.

132. 13. Tattering a kip. Slang for a disreputable mode of merry-making.

25. Pimping and pedigree. Ministering to one's pleasures in a low sense, and attaching oneself to people on account of their rank.

133. 6. To fight a duel. Duelling was very common throughout the eighteenth century. Mrs. Delany described it as the reigning curse of the age in which she lived. Yet there were laws against it, and killing in a duel was regarded as murder. See Chaps. XXVIII. and XXX.

134. 25-28. Are you . . . as how that. Notice the illiteracy of the great man, shown in his language.

135. 24. Mr. Crispe's office. "It was the common practice of the London agents of the East India Company, without one jot or tittle of a legal right empowering them to do so, to organize bands . . . to entrap lusty youths . . . and to cause them to be detained in establishments scattered here and there in the capital . . . until they could be sold into the hands of Bengal ship captains, who employed them in the service of the company, in Hindustan. Other kidnapping establishments existed for the detention of youths and men until they could be sold to Pennsylvanian and North American planters, unless ransomed, in the meantime, by their friends.—W. C. Sydney's *England and the English in the Eighteenth Century*, I, 353.

136. 15. Synod of Pennsylvania. Probably, if Mr. Crispe's statement has any meaning at all, the reference is to the synod of one of the reformed churches, numerous in Pennsylvania at that time.

137. 15-16. I found myself . . . a stranger. Follow the account of George Primrose's wandering in the story of Goldsmith's own "Philosophic vagabondage." *The Traveller* should be read in its entirety in connection with the remainder of this chapter.

138. 10-11. Æsop and his basket of bread. What is the fable here referred to?

24. Doctor's cap and gown. The different degrees granted by universities in England and on the Continent of Europe are

marked by differences in the cut, trimmings, and colors of the gowns worn by those holding them.

140. 1. Taste and a large fortune. The collection of pictures and curiosities was a common fad of the wealthy, and auctions were favorite lounging places. When the London gentleman here mentioned "stepped into a large fortune," he took up the fad in order to be in the fashion. Cf. *Citizen of the World*, Letter XXXIV.

5. Cognoscento. An error for *cognoscente*, an Italian word meaning knowing, intelligent, especially in matters of art. Cf. *connoisseur*.

142. 12. Theses. The custom of philosophic disputation was a survival from the Middle Ages. Cf. Longfellow's *Golden Legend*, VI.

30-31. A company of comedians. There is reason to suspect that, walking from Dover to London, on his arrival in England, in 1756, Goldsmith "attempted a 'low comedy' performance in a country barn."

146. 27. Falkland. Cf. reference in Pope's *Essay on Man*, IV. 99.

148. 20. Cross of her money. Silver and gold coins were often stamped on one side with a cross.

27-28. With a sussarara. With a vengeance. Said to be a corruption of Lat. *certiorari*, a law word meaning a writ for expediting justice.

30. At the Sign of the Harrow. Inns and public houses in England are still known by their signs or trading-tokens, which are commonly painted on sign-boards. The custom is a survival from the time when few people could read. Do you remember any references to these inn-signs in other English novels; e.g. in those of Dickens?

151. 16. Privately performed by a Popish priest. It was a capital offence for a Catholic priest to celebrate a marriage between Protestants, or even when one of the contracting parties was a Protestant.

155. 2-21. It was night, etc. "What more perfect description of the stillness of night," asks Mr. Black, "was ever given?" Point out the literary skill with which this scene is arranged. What did Mr. Burchell say about the "use of contrast," some time ago? See also note to **106. 26.**

160. 15. Matilda. How does the story told by the Vicar illustrate his statement that "our happiness is in the power of one who can bring it about a thousand unforeseen ways that mock our foresight"? The "romancing historian" is perhaps Davila or Guicciardini.

167. 25. Driving. In Ireland, a landlord had the power of driving to the pound the cattle of a tenant who could not pay his rent; the beasts being kept impounded till the money was forthcoming, or sold. This was called "driving for the rent."

168. 25-26. Instruments used in the art of war. Caltraps, or caltrops, for which see Dictionary.

169. 8. The terrors of a prison. The horrible condition of the English prisons, where every form of abuse and atrocity flourished unchecked, was one of the disgraces of civilization during the eighteenth century. Prison-reform really began with John Howard (1726-90). For Goldsmith's influence in the matter, see *Introduction*.

173. 2. Felons and debtors. "It must be borne in mind that most of the inmates of gaols were not even criminals. Debtors formed a very large proportion of the population; the victims, that is to say, of the existing commercial code which gave the creditor his debtor's body, but no chance of recovering his debt. These debtors often brought their families with them, and the already limited space was further crowded by weak and unoffending women and children." — *Social England*, ed. H. D. Traill, V., 484. See also Johnson's *Idler*, Nos. XXII. and XXXVIII. Imprisonment for debt was not abolished till 1869. The student will recall Captain Shandon's misadventures in Thackeray's *Pendennis*, and the prison scenes in Dickens's *Pickwick* and *Little Dorrit*.

10. **Perquisite.** "Gaols were mostly private institutions, or, at least, worked so as to pay their way, leased out to ruthless, rapacious keepers, who used every menace and extortion to wring money out of the wretched beings committed to their cruel care." — *Social England*, ed. Traill V., 493.

174. 21-22. **Anarchon ara**, etc. Notice the delightfully humorous way in which, through these scraps of Greek and odds and ends of learned phraseology, we are at once led to identify the redoubtable Ephraim Jenkinson.

175. 6. **Coiner.** False coining was then a capital offence.

178. 19. **Against to-morrow.** Prisoners in jail for debt had to provide for their own support.

185. 21. **Some were penitent, and all attentive.** Cf. account of the good parson's preaching, in *The Deserted Village*, lines 177-180.

30. **Tobacco-stoppers.** Little plugs for pressing down the burning tobacco in the bowl of a pipe.

186. 12. **It was highly to be wished that legislative power**, etc. Cf. *Citizen of the World*, Letter LXXX.

207. 7. **Like his horizon**, etc. Cf. *The Traveller*, lines 27-28.

210. 7. **Canvas.** Used for coach windows, instead of glass.

214. 3. **Staked a counter.** Set up something to offset the risk run, or loss sustained, by the other person.

216. 19. **I will undertake to secure you.** What does Sir William mean?

220. 18. **Tyburn.** Formerly the name of a northern parish of London, now called St. Marylebone. It was, until 1783, the place of execution for the city of London and county of Middlesex.

223. 28. **Nor can I go on without a reflection**, etc. A sort of apology, on Goldsmith's part, for the extraordinary "accidents" which co-operate in the *dénouement* of his story.

231. 8. The cloth. The clergy : from the broadcloth of which their costumes are made.

17-18. And shook their chains, etc. Quoted, with a single verbal change, from Congreve's *Mourning Bride*, I., 2.

239. 1. Sit above the two young brides. Take precedence of them, by sitting nearer the head of the table.

APPENDIX.

CIRCUMSTANCES OF THE WRITING AND PUBLICATION OF "THE VICAR OF WAKEFIELD."

THE circumstances attending the negotiations for the sale and the subsequent production of *The Vicar of Wakefield* remain to-day, in spite of the industry and acumen of Goldsmith's biographers, enveloped in a good deal of mystery. It would be out of place, in an edition like the present, to enter at any length into the complicated details of the story. But the important points, so far as they are to be made out, may be briefly summarized.¹

The best known account of the sale of the manuscript, and the one which, indeed, has long been regarded as our final source of information about the matter, is that given by Boswell, "authentically," he is careful to say, "from Johnson's own exact narration." It is as follows:—

"I received one morning a message from poor Goldsmith that he was in great distress, and as it was not in his power to come to me, begging that I would come to him as soon as possible. I sent him a guinea, and promised to come to him directly. I accordingly went as soon as I was drest, and found that his landlady had arrested him for his rent, at which he was in a violent passion. I perceived that he had already changed my guinea, and had got a bottle of Madeira and a glass before him. I put the cork into

¹ An admirably clear and judicial account of the whole matter will be found in Austin Dobson's *Life of Goldsmith* (in the *Great Writers Series*), pp. 110-117. Upon this I have freely drawn, and to it the student, in search of further information, may be referred.

the bottle, desired he would be calm, and began to talk to him of the means by which he might be extricated. He then told me that he had a novel ready for the press, which he produced to me. I looked into it, and saw its merit; told the landlady I should soon return, and having gone to a bookseller, sold it for sixty pounds.¹ I brought Goldsmith the money, and he discharged his rent, not without rating his landlady in a high tone for having used him so ill."²

It is impossible, in reading this passage, not to feel that it holds its firm place in the annals of literature on account not simply of its apparently authoritative character, but also of the strong human appeal that it makes to every lover of Johnson and Goldsmith. Johnson's readiness to hasten to "poor Goldsmith" in his distress; his shrewd guess, shown by the instant despatch of a guinea, at the nature of the emergency; the bottle of Madeira, afterwards discreetly corked; the sudden production of a manuscript novel "ready for the press"; the immediate sale of this by the great dictator; and Goldsmith's virtuous indignation with his over-insistent landlady,—all these items make up a dramatic picture which we would be unwilling to think false in a single particular. But a "new if somewhat troubled light" has within recent years been thrown upon the early history of *The Vicar of Wakefield* by Mr. Charles Welsh in his biography of the publisher, Newbery.³ He shows conclusively, on the evidence furnished by old account-books, that on the 28th of October, 1762, Goldsmith himself sold

¹ Johnson elsewhere says "guineas" instead of "pounds"; but guineas and pounds were then frequently used as convertible terms.

² Boswell's *Johnson* (Globe ed.), p. 140. The story of this episode, similar in broad outline, but with considerable variation in detail, is told by Mrs. Piozzi in her *Anecdotes of the Late Samuel Johnson*, and by Sir John Hawkins in his *Life of Johnson*. Boswell was only too glad to show that these two writers had "strangely mis-stated the history of Goldsmith's situation and Johnson's kindly interference." (*Ibid.*) In an oddly garbled form the incident reappears in the *Memoirs of Richard Cumberland*.

³ *A Bookseller of the Last Century*. For some account of Newbery, see in the present book, note to Chapter XVIII.

to Benjamin Collins, a printer of Salisbury,¹ a third share of his story, then either already written or in process of writing. If this transaction antedated the scene described by Boswell, Johnson must wittingly or unwittingly have sold a work already partly disposed of; and this it is of course impossible to suppose. If, on the other hand, the one-third share was made over to Collins after this scene, then Johnson could not, as we are accustomed to imagine, and as the words reported by Boswell have led us to infer, have sold the entire copyright out of hand for sixty pounds.

To make matters worse, we have in the reminiscences of Cooke—a somewhat doubtful authority, it is true, but one who, as Mr. Dobson has said, is entitled to be heard by the side of Hawkins, Cumberland, and Mrs. Piozzi—a statement alleged to have been made by Goldsmith himself, which at first sight seems hopelessly at variance with Boswell's story, and which has therefore been unduly neglected by Goldsmith's biographers. "The Doctor," Cooke says, "soon after his acquaintance with Newbery, for whom he held the 'pen of a ready writer,' removed to lodgings in Wine Office Court, Fleet Street, where he finished his *Vicar of Wakefield*, and on which his friend Newbery advanced him twenty guineas: 'A sum,' says the Doctor, 'I was so little used to receive in a lump, that I felt myself under the embarrassment of Captain Brazen in the play,² whether I should build a privateer or a play-house with the money.'" If Goldsmith sold one share of his book to Collins for twenty guineas, and a second share to Newbery for the same amount, how was it that Johnson disposed of the manuscript for sixty pounds or guineas—a sum which he afterwards described as a sufficient price"?

Out of the difficulties thus presented Mr. Dobson has discovered a way of escape which seems satisfactory—the more so in that it leaves Boswell's narrative practically intact. On that memorable morning when Johnson, not yet dressed, was summarily called to Goldsmith's assistance, no arrangements, he suggests, for the sale

¹ The imprint of the first edition was—"Salisbury: Printed by B. Collins; for F. Newbery, in Paternoster Row."

² Farquhar's *Recruiting Officer*, Act V., Scene 3.

of the manuscript novel had as yet been made. Johnson then went either to Francis Newbery (the nephew and ultimately the successor to John), or to Strahan (a personal friend who is known afterwards to have held the third share in the copyright), "settled upon the price of the manuscript, and procured for Goldsmith 'immediate relief' in the shape of an advance for one or for two shares. The other share or shares would remain to be disposed of by the author, and so, either at Salisbury or London, the transfer to Collins would come about." Goldsmith's own statement, transmitted by Cooke, fits naturally into this theory, since "it gives the value of a third share accurately; it describes it as an advance"; and "it makes the advancer Newbery," who as we know possessed at the start an equal interest in the book with Collins and Strahan.

The only objection to this explanation is, as Mr. Dobson says, that it puts back the Johnson episode to 1762, while the date usually given is 1764. "But 1764 has only been chosen because it is the year of the publication of *The Traveller*. And it is noticeable that Boswell, who made Johnson's acquaintance in May, 1763, does not speak of the incident as if it had happened within his personal experience. On the other hand, in 1762 Goldsmith was at Wine Office Court, where, Cooke says, he finished the book."

How was it, then, as the sale of one-third certainly, and probably of the whole of the copyright took place as early as October, 1762, that the book was not issued till March, 1766? The actual delay in publication has always puzzled Goldsmith's biographers, and is even more troublesome now that we know it to have been a good deal longer than was formerly supposed. The usual explanation is that the publishers did not proceed with the printing of the book from lack of faith in it as a commercial investment, and that they brought it out only when the reputation won by Goldsmith with *The Traveller* encouraged them in the undertaking. This view is based on remarks of Johnson reported by Boswell. Speaking of the sale of the manuscript for sixty pounds, he said: "And, Sir, . . . a sufficient price too, when it was sold; for then the fame of Goldsmith had not been elevated, as it afterwards was by his

'Traveller'; and the bookseller had such faint hopes of profit by his bargain, that he kept the manuscript by him a long time, and did not publish it till after the 'Traveller' had appeared. Then, to be sure, it was accidentally worth more money."¹ At a dinner at Sir Joshua Reynolds's, in 1778, Johnson practically repeated the statement: "His 'Vicar of Wakefield,' I myself did not think would have had much success. It was written and sold to a bookseller before his 'Traveller'; but published after, so little expectation had the bookseller from it. Had it been sold after the 'Traveller,' he might have had twice as much money for it, though sixty guineas was no mean price. The bookseller had the advantage of Goldsmith's reputation from the 'Traveller' in the sale, though Goldsmith had it not in selling the copy."² Scott distinctly adopts this explanation: "When he [Newbery] completed the bargain, which he probably entered into partly from compassion, partly from deference to Johnson's judgment, he had so little confidence in the value of his purchase, that *The Vicar of Wakefield* remained in manuscript until the publication of *The Traveller* had established the fame of the author."³

But as Forster pointed out,⁴ this theory is untenable, since it was not until eight months after *The Traveller* had reached its fourth edition that *The Vicar of Wakefield* appeared. He himself thinks that the delay may have been occasioned by "business arrangements between the younger and the elder Newbery"; the latter of whom possibly objected to the issue of the novel "contemporaneously with *The Traveller*," which he had published, and with the sale of which a new work by the same author might conceivably have interfered. But this hypothesis does not account for the holding over the story from the date of the sale to Collins to that of the issue of *The Traveller* in December, 1764. The most reasonable supposition seems to be that of Mr. Dobson, who suggests that though Goldsmith had "practically written" his novel when he sold

¹ Boswell's *Johnson* (Globe ed.), p. 140.

² *Ibid.*, p. 480.

³ *Oliver Goldsmith*, in *Lives of Eminent Novelists and Dramatists*.

⁴ *Life and Times of Goldsmith* (Minerva ed.), p. 233.

it to Collins & Co., it was not in final shape for publication ; and that Goldsmith himself, having been paid for the work, put off making the additions necessary for the "two vols., 12mo," which he had promised. All that we know of Goldsmith's character, and of his circumstances at the time, renders this solution plausible ; and it seems to be supported by various details of evidence yielded, on close study, by the work itself.¹

¹ See Dobson's *Goldsmith*, pp. 116-17.

AN INTRODUCTION TO THE Study of English Fiction.

By **WILLIAM EDWARD SIMONDS, Ph.D.**

Professor of English Literature, Knox College.

ENGLISH fiction is eminently worthy of the attention of the student of literature, and the history of its development is a subject not unsuited to the methods of the class-room. The purpose of this volume is to provide material for a comparative study of our fiction in its successive epochs, and for an intelligent estimate of the characteristics and merits of our story-tellers in the various stages of their art. The book is inductive in plan. A brief historical outline is presented in five introductory chapters which bear the following titles: I. Old English Story Tellers. II. The Romance at the Court of Elizabeth. III. The Rise of the Novel. IV. The Perfection of the Novel. V. Tendencies of To-day. VI. Books for Reference and Reading. These chapters are followed by twelve texts illustrative of the different periods described. These selections are: I. Beowulf. II. King Horn. III. Arcadia. IV. Forbonius and Prisceria (entire). V. Doron's Wooing. VI. Shepherds' Wives' Song. VII. Jack Wilton. VIII. Euphuism (from "A Margarite of America"). IX. Moll Flanders. X. Pamela. XI. Tom Jones. XII. Tristram Shandy.

F. J. Furnival, *The Shakespearian, London, England*: I'm glad you've written on fiction. It is the greatest power in literature now, and has been the least studied scientifically. You've done the right thing.

R. G. Moulton, *Professor of Literature in English, University of Chicago*. You are rendering a great service to literary education in recognizing fiction as a field for inductive treatment. The arrangement of the work will greatly increase its practical usefulness.

Cloth. 240 pages. 80 cents.

Briefer Edition. — Without illustrative selections.

Boards. 91 pages. 30 cents.

D. C. HEATH & CO., Publishers

BOSTON

NEW YORK

CHICAGO

Heath's English Classics.

- Addison's Sir Roger de Coverley Papers.** Edited by Professor W. H. HUDSON, Cloth. 232 pages. Nine full-page illustrations and two maps. 35 cents.
- Burke's Speech on Conciliation with America.** Edited by A. J. GEORGE, Master in the Newton (Mass.) High School. Cloth. 119 pages. 20 cents.
- Carlyle's Essay on Burns.** Edited, with introduction and notes, by ANDREW J. GEORGE. Cloth. 159 pages. Illustrated. 25 cents.
- Coleridge's Rime of the Ancient Mariner.** Edited by ANDREW J. GEORGE. Cloth. 96 pages. Illustrated. 20 cents.
- Cooper's Last of the Mohicans.** Edited by J. G. WIGHT, Principal Girls' High School, New York City. Cloth. Maps and illustrations. 659 pages. 50 cents.
- DeQuincey's Flight of a Tartar Tribe.** Edited by G. A. WAUCHOPE, Professor in the University of South Carolina. Cloth. 112 pages. 25 cents.
- Dryden's Palamon and Arcite.** Edited by WILLIAM H. CRAWSHAW, Professor in Colgate University. Cloth. 158 pages. Illustrated. 25 cents.
- George Eliot's Silas Marner.** Edited by G. A. WAUCHOPE, Professor in the University of South Carolina. Cloth. 288 pages. Illustrated. 35 cents.
- Goldsmith's Vicar of Wakefield.** Edited by W. H. HUDSON. Cloth. 300 pages. Seventeen full-page illustrations by C. E. Brock. 50 cents.
- Macaulay's Essay on Milton.** Edited by ALBERT PERRY WALKER, editor of Milton's "Paradise Lost," Master in the English High School, Boston. Cloth. 146 pages. Illustrated. 25 cents.
- Macaulay's Essay on Addison.** Edited by ALBERT PERRY WALKER. Cloth. 192 pages. Illustrated. 25 cents.
- Milton's Paradise Lost. Books I and II.** Edited by ALBERT PERRY WALKER. Cloth. 188 pages. Illustrated. 25 cents.
- Milton's Minor Poems.** Edited by ALBERT PERRY WALKER. Cloth. 190 pages. Illustrated. 25 cents.
- Pope's Translation of the Iliad. Books I, VI, XXII, XXIV.** Edited by PAUL SHOREY, Professor in the University of Chicago. Cloth. 174 pages. Illustrated. 25 cents.
- Scott's Ivanhoe.** Edited by PORTER LANDER MACCLINTOCK, Instructor in the University of Chicago. Cloth. 556 pages. Seventeen full-page illustrations by C. E. Brock. 50 cents.
- Shakespeare's Macbeth.** Edited by EDMUND K. CHAMBERS. In the *Arden Shakespeare* series. Cloth. 188 pages. 25 cents.
- Shakespeare's Merchant of Venice.** Edited by H. L. WITHERS. In the *Arden Shakespeare* series. Cloth. 178 pages. 25 cents.
- Tennyson's Enoch Arden and the two Locksley Halls.** Edited by Professor CALVIN S. BROWN. Cloth. 168 pages. 25 cents.
- Tennyson's The Princess.** With introduction and notes by ANDREW J. GEORGE. Cloth. 148 pages. Illustrated. 25 cents.
- Webster's First Bunker Hill Oration.** With introduction and notes by ANDREW J. GEORGE. Boards. 55 pages. 20 cents.
-

D. C. HEATH & CO., Boston, New York, Chicago.

robes de nuit

robes de nuit
dresses of the night



son mit
goatee



my spring
hat

Wasser

16.45	
8.35	
13.10	
12.35	
7.5	

mistake



16.45	
4.10	
12.35	



*P6-BUW-24